

ВТОРАЯ РУССКАЯ КНИГА



SECOND RUSSIAN  
BOOK

FORBES



California  
Library

OXFORD

AT THE CLARENDON PRESS

3s. 6d. net

LIBRARY  
UNIVERSITY OF  
CALIFORNIA  
SAN DIEGO

E. L. Griffith

26. 7. 17.



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2007 with funding from  
Microsoft Corporation

**SECOND RUSSIAN BOOK**

*BY THE SAME AUTHOR*

RUSSIAN GRAMMAR. 6s. net.

FIRST RUSSIAN BOOK. The case-endings and many vocabularies with phonetic transcription, and numerous easy and useful phrases. 2s. 6d. net.

THIRD RUSSIAN BOOK. Extracts from AKSÁKOV, GRIGORÓVICH, HÉRZEN and SALTYKÓV, with accents marked throughout, copious notes and complete vocabulary.

In the press.

FOURTH RUSSIAN BOOK. Russian and English Exercises, &c. In preparation.

THE BALKANS: A History of Bulgaria, Serbia, Greece, Rumania, Turkey. By NEVILL FORBES, A. J. TOYNBEE, D. MITRANY, D. G. HOGARTH. Crown 8vo. With three maps 5s. net.

# SECOND RUSSIAN BOOK

A PRACTICAL MANUAL OF  
RUSSIAN VERBS

BY

NEVILL FORBES, M.A.

READER IN RUSSIAN AND THE OTHER SLAVONIC LANGUAGES  
IN THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

OXFORD  
AT THE CLARENDON PRESS  
1916

**OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS**

**LONDON EDINBURGH GLASGOW NEW YORK**

**TORONTO MELBOURNE BOMBAY**

**HUMPHREY MILFORD**

**PUBLISHER TO THE UNIVERSITY**



## PREFACE

THE present volume is a companion to the *First Russian Book*. That dealt mainly with the declension of substantives, pronouns, and adjectives ; this is devoted to conjugation. It is intended to be a practical guide-book to the Russian verb ; at the same time it has been conceived in such a way that those who prefer to start Russian by learning the verb can begin with this book and use the other as a supplement.

This book falls into two parts. The first (chapters 1–17) explains the nature and structure of the Russian verb and touches certain of its syntactical uses ; the second (chapters 18–100) consists of a systematic exposition of important verbs with examples of their use. Those, therefore, who wish to dine off the verbs without seeing how they are prepared may begin at chapter 18. Those of less robust digestion can order any verb, as it were, *à la carte*, by reference to the index. Gluttons should begin at the beginning and go through to the end.

The arrangement of the verbs is neither alphabetical nor grammatical, yet it is not so chaotic as from its informal character it may at first sight appear.

The verbs are arranged with a broad view to their utility. Generally speaking the plan has been to give prominence to those verbs which the beginner finds primarily essential and especially puzzling ; the primarily essential verbs in Russian, as in many other languages, tend to have the most idiosyncrasies, to be what is illogically termed the most ‘irregular’. Occasionally it has been found desirable and

possible to arrange consecutively verbs which are etymologically cognate; in some cases these sequences are connected in meaning also, in others this relation is not immediately apparent. Elsewhere verbs of various origin have necessarily been brought together in consecutive or single chapters because they are similar or cognate in meaning, which sometimes entails the divorce of etymologically related verbs.

It is hoped, however, that with the aid of the table of contents and of the indices the method of arrangement will prove not only serviceable but also not unappetizing.

N. F.

OXFORD, *April*, 1916.

# CONTENTS

CHAPTER	PAGE
1. The Parts of the Verb . . . . .	1
2. The Aspects of the Verb and their Formation . . . . .	5
3. Examples showing how the Aspects are used . . . . .	9
4. Variations of the Imperfective and Perfective Aspects . . . . .	13
5. The Formation of the Parts of the Verb . . . . .	17
6. The Formation of the Present : class I or e-verbs . . . . .	19
7. The Formation of the Present : class II or и-verbs . . . . .	24
8. The Formation of the Imperative . . . . .	29
9. The Formation of the Infinitive . . . . .	33
10. Infinitives in -ать . . . . .	34
11. Infinitives in -вать . . . . .	36
12. Infinitives in -ять, -(ер)еть, -ѣть, -ыть, -ить, -оть, -(п)уть . . . . .	40
13. Infinitives in -ти, -тъ, -чь . . . . .	42
14. The Formation of the Past . . . . .	44
15. The Formation of the Conditional . . . . .	48
16. Questions . . . . .	50
17. Negations . . . . .	51
18. <i>To be able, I can</i> : мочь, могу́ . . . . .	54
19. <i>To help</i> : помогáть, помóчь . . . . .	60
20. <i>To want, to wish</i> : хотѣть, желáть . . . . .	62
21. <i>Must, need, ought</i> : надо, ну́жно и пр. . . . .	68
22. <i>To go (on foot)</i> : итти́ (идти́), ходи́ть . . . . .	73
23. Examples of the use of these verbs . . . . .	75
24. <i>To come (on foot)</i> : приходи́ть, прии́ти . . . . .	83
25. <i>To go away (on foot)</i> : уходи́ть, уи́ти . . . . .	86
26. Other compounds of ходи́ть and итти́ . . . . .	88
27. <i>To go (ride, drive, travel)</i> : ъхать, ъздить . . . . .	90
28. Examples of the use of these verbs . . . . .	92

CHAPTER	PAGE
29. <i>To arrive</i> : приѣзжать, приѣхать . . . . .	100
30. <i>To depart</i> : уѣзжать, уѣхать . . . . .	103
31. <i>To carry</i> : нести, ( <i>to wear</i> ) носить . . . . .	104
32. <i>To fetch, to bring (small things)</i> : приносить, принести	107
33. <i>To convey, to cart</i> : везти, возить . . . . .	109
34. <i>To fetch, to bring (large things)</i> : привозить, привезти	110
35. <i>To lead</i> : вести, водить . . . . .	112
36. <i>To stand</i> : стоять, <i>to cost</i> : стоить ; стоять= <i>to stand</i>	115
37. стоить : <i>to cost</i> . . . . .	117
38. <i>To become, to get (intransitive)</i> : становиться, стать .	120
39. <i>To stop, to halt, to put up</i> : останавливаться, остано- виться . . . . .	126
40. <i>To stay, to remain</i> : оставаться, остаться . . . . .	129
41. Other compounds of -ставать and -стать . . . . .	133
42. <i>To set, to place, to put</i> : ставить, поставить . . . . .	137
43. <i>To leave (transitive)</i> : оставлять, оставить . . . . .	139
44. Other compounds of -ставлять and -ставить . . . . .	141
45. <i>To put</i> : дѣвать, дѣть . . . . .	143
46. <i>To dress (to put clothes on and off)</i> : compounds of дѣвать and дѣть . . . . .	144
47. <i>To put, to lay</i> : класть, положить (полагать) and their compounds . . . . .	149
48. <i>To lie down (to go to bed)</i> : ложиться, лечь . . . . .	154
49. <i>To lie (to be in bed)</i> : лежать . . . . .	156
50. <i>To sit down (to take a seat)</i> : садиться, сѣсть . . . . .	158
51. <i>To sit (to be sitting)</i> : сидѣть . . . . .	160
52. <i>To take</i> : брать, взять . . . . .	163
53. Compounds of -бирать and брать . . . . .	166
54. Compounds of -имать and -ять . . . . .	167
55. <i>To understand</i> : понимать, понять . . . . .	170
56. <i>To catch</i> : ловить, поймать . . . . .	171
57. <i>To know</i> : знать, узнать, -знавать . . . . .	173
58. <i>To mean</i> : значить ; <i>to become acquainted</i> : знако- миться . . . . .	175
59. <i>To know how</i> : умѣть, сумѣть . . . . .	177
60. <i>To give</i> : давать, дать . . . . .	179
61. <i>To say, to tell, to speak, to talk</i> : говорить, сказать .	185

CHAPTER	PAGE
62. Compounds of -казать ( <i>to show</i> ) . . . . .	191
63. <i>To eat</i> : ѣсть, съѣсть . . . . .	194
64. <i>To drink</i> : пить, выпить . . . . .	199
65. <i>To buy</i> : покупать, купить ; <i>to sell</i> : продавать, продать . . . . .	202
66. <i>To pay</i> : платить ; <i>to change</i> : мѣнять ; <i>to cost</i> (chap. 37) . . . . .	205
67. <i>To see</i> : видѣть ; <i>to look</i> : смотрѣть — (видать, глядѣть)	208
68. <i>To hear</i> : слышать ; <i>to listen</i> : слѣшать ( <i>to obey</i> ) — слыхать — ( <i>to smell</i> ) . . . . .	217
69. <i>To read</i> : читать, прочесть . . . . .	224
70. <i>To count (to consider)</i> : считать . . . . .	228
71. <i>To write</i> : писать ; <i>to play</i> : играть ; <i>to sing</i> : пѣть	231
72. <i>To send</i> : слать, посылать . . . . .	236
73. <i>To receive, to get (transitive)</i> : получать, получить .	239
74. <i>To run</i> : бѣжать, бѣгать ; <i>to fly</i> : летѣть, летать .	240
75. The compounds of these verbs . . . . .	246
76. <i>To swim, to float</i> : плыть, плавать . . . . .	250
77. <i>To do (to make)</i> : дѣлать, сдѣлать . . . . .	251
78. <i>To permit</i> : позволять, позволить . . . . .	254
79. <i>To let (go), allow</i> : пускать, пустить . . . . .	256
80. <i>To forbid</i> : запрещать, запретить . . . . .	258
81. <i>To begin</i> : начинать, начать ; <i>to continue</i> : продол- жать . . . . .	259
82. <i>To finish</i> : кончать, кончить ( <i>to cease</i> , cf. p. 135) .	262
83. <i>To call, be called</i> : звать, называть . . . . .	264
84. <i>To ask (questions)</i> : спрашивать, спросить ; <i>to invite</i> : приглашать, пригласить . . . . .	266
85. <i>To ask (request, beg)</i> : просить, попросить . . . . .	270
86. <i>To answer</i> : отвѣчать, отвѣтить . . . . .	272
87. <i>Sleeping, waking, washing, &amp;c. (getting up, cf. p. 133,</i> <i>dressings, cf. chap. 46)</i> . . . . .	275
88. <i>Opening and shutting</i> . . . . .	278
89. <i>In one's room</i> . . . . .	281
90. <i>Light, heat, and cold</i> . . . . .	283
91. <i>To lose</i> : терять ; <i>to look for</i> : искать ; <i>to find</i> : нахо- дить, найти . . . . .	286

CHAPTER	PAGE
92. <i>To be, to have</i> . . . . .	290
93. Physical (Manual) Activities . . . . .	295
94. <i>To fall</i> : падать, пасть ; <i>to meet</i> : встречать, встрѣ- тить ; <i>to jump</i> . . . . .	299
95. <i>To turn, to return</i> . . . . .	301
96. <i>Delay and haste</i> . . . . .	304
97. <i>To try, decide, forget, remember</i> . . . . .	307
98. <i>To use, get used, learn, be of use</i> . . . . .	310
99. <i>Birth, growth, life and death</i> . . . . .	312
100. <i>The emotions</i> . . . . .	319
APPENDIX I. Alphabetical List of Prepositions used in composition with Verbs . . . . .	325
APPENDIX II. Certain Verbs, different in meaning, but similar in appearance . . . . .	326
INDEX OF RUSSIAN VERBS, &c. . . . .	331
ENGLISH SUBJECT-INDEX . . . . .	334

## BIBLIOGRAPHICAL NOTE

For the further study of the Russian verb the following works are particularly recommended :

*Morphologie des aspects du verbe russe*, par A. Mazon. Paris, Librairie Honoré Champion, 1908.

*Emplois des aspects du verbe russe*, par A. Mazon. Paris, Librairie Honoré Champion, 1914.

*De l'accentuation du verbe russe*, par Paul Boyer. Paris, Imprimerie Nationale, 1895. (Centenaire de l'École des langues orientales vivantes. Recueil de mémoires publié par les professeurs de l'École.)

*Das russische Zeitwort (The Russian Verb)*, by A. Garbell. (A comprehensive alphabetical list of Russian verbs, giving their parts in both aspects, accented, published separately as part of the *Méthode Toussaint-Langenscheidt*.) Berlin, Langenscheidtsche Verlagsbuchhandlung; also published by M. O. Wolf and Co., Petrograd and Moscow, 1901.

The verbs are also fully explained in the author's *Russian Grammar*.

---

The use of the participles, declinable and indeclinable, will be especially exemplified in the *Third Russian Book*.

## ABBREVIATIONS

*F.R.B.* = *First Russian Book*. Oxford, at the Clarendon Press, 1915.

*R.G.* = *Russian Grammar*. Oxford, at the Clarendon Press, 1914.

*ipfv.* = *imperfective*.

*pfv.* = *perfective*.



# CHAPTER 1

## THE PARTS OF THE VERB

THE Russian verb consists of the following twelve parts which are here illustrated by the verb *читать* = *to read*. *imperfective*

ACTIVE	}	Present	читаю	chítáyu			
		Past	читалъ	chítál			
		Compound Future	бúду читать <sup>1</sup>	búdu chítáit' <sup>1</sup>			
		Conditional	читалъ бы <sup>2</sup>	chítálby <sup>2</sup>			
		Imperative	читай	chítái			
		Infinitive	читать	chítáit'			
		Indeclin. Partics.	{	Present	чита́я	chítáyá	<i>imperf. a</i>
				Past	чита́въ <sup>3</sup>	chítáf <sup>3</sup>	
		PASSIVE <sup>8</sup>	}	Present Participle	чита́ющий <sup>4</sup>	chítáyushchi <sup>4</sup>	"
				Past Participle	чита́вший <sup>5</sup>	chítáfshy <sup>5</sup>	"
Present Participle	чита́емый <sup>6</sup>			chítáyemy <sup>6</sup>	"		
Past Participle	чита́нный <sup>7</sup>			chítanny <sup>7</sup>	"		

1. Accented vowels, followed by a consonant + *ь*, are affected by the soft sign *ь*, so that the vowel *a* in such a position sounds almost like *ai* in *Cairo*, cf. *F. R. B.*, p. 2.

2. This *y* sounds like the *y* in *hymn*.

3. Voiced consonants at the end of a word become almost voiceless, i.e. *v* becomes *f*, cf. *F. R. B.*, p. 6.

4. -й is a diphthong, and sounds like и (i), cf. *F. R. B.*, p. 4.

5. Voiced consonants followed by voiceless consonants become voiceless themselves, i.e. *vsh* becomes *fsh*, cf. *F. R. B.*, p. 8.

After ж and ш, и sounds like ы (y), cf. *F. R. B.*, p. 9.

6. The vowels е and ѣ are both pronounced *ye*, as in English *yet*, after all vowels and after all consonants except ж, ч, ш and щ, which absorb the *y*-sound; except in such cases they are here always phonetically transliterated *ye*, or, occasionally, (y)e, cf. *F. R. B.*, p. 9.

7. -й is a diphthong, and sounds like ы (y), cf. *F. R. B.*, p. 4.

In the system of transliteration *y*, after or between consonants = ы, is pronounced like the *y* in *Whitby*, *exactly*; *y* before a vowel—*ya*, *ye*, *yi*, *yo*, *yu*=я, е or ѣ, и, ё, ю—is pronounced like the *y* in *yard*, *yet*, *yield*, *yonder*, *yule*, cf. *F. R. B.*, p. 4.

After all consonants, except л н т д, и (yi) sounds like *i* in *marine*; after ж and ш, и sounds like ы (y), cf. *F. R. B.*, p. 9.

8. The Passive voice of the finite verb can best be expressed in Russian by using the 3rd person plural of the Present tense Active; this is also used to express our idiom *one*. In the case of certain verbs the passive can also be expressed by the reflexive pronoun -ся. Example: *этого не дѣлаютъ* or *это не дѣлается*=*that is not done* or *one doesn't do that* (cf. p. 251).

In the case of the Russian verbs it is not sufficient to know the Infinitive in order to tell how the rest of the verb is conjugated, as might appear to be the case judging by this harmless specimen.

Conversely, knowledge of the Present is not sufficient to predict the form of the Infinitive or of the forms of the verb derived from it.

It is necessary to know both the Infinitive and the Present in order to form the other parts of the verb, because in many cases the stem of the former is different from that of the latter; this is here illustrated by the verb

гнать = to drive (trans.) *imperfective*

ACTIVE	}	Present	гоню <sup>1</sup>	ganyú <sup>1</sup>
		Past	гналь	gnal
		Compound Future	буду гнать	búdu gnát'
		Conditional	гналь бы	gnálby
		Imperative	гонí	ganyí
		Infinitive	гнать	gnát'
		Gerund. {	}	Indeclin. { Present
Partics. { Past	гнав́ь			gnaf
PASSIVE	}	Present Participle	гоня́щий	ganyáshchi
		Past Participle	гна́вший	gnáfshy
		Present Participle	гонíмый	ganyímy
		Past Participle	гна́нный	gnánny

From this second example it will be seen that the Past, Compound Future, Conditional, Past Indeclinable Participle, and both Past Participles are formed with or from the Infinitive, while the Imperative, Present Indeclinable Participle, and both Present Participles are formed from the Present.

This applies to all Russian verbs without exception, and holds good of all their parts, except in the case of two or three irregular indeclinable participles and imperatives.

Further to illustrate this, two more examples of verbs are given, their parts arranged according to their derivation; from the second example emerges the fact that not all Russian verbs are to be had complete in twelve parts, indeed the majority of them being more or less defective in participles.

<sup>1</sup> Unaccented o before the accent sounds like a, cf. *F. R. B.*, p. 5.

рисова́ть = *to draw* (sc. *design*)

Present	рису́ю <sup>1</sup>	risúyu <sup>1</sup>
Imperative	рису́й	risúi
Pres. Indeclinable Participle	рису́я	risúya
Pres. Part. Active	рису́ющий	risúyushchi
Pres. Part. Passive	рису́емый	risúyemy
Infinitive	рисова́ть	risavá't'
Compound Future	бу́ду рисова́ть	búdu risavá't'
Past	рисова́ль	risavál
Conditional	рисова́ль бы	risaválby
Past Indeclinable Participle	рисова́въ	risaváf
Past Part. Active	рисова́вший	risaváfshy
Past Part. Passive	рисова́нный	risóvanny

писа́ть = *to write*

Present	пишú	pishu
Imperative	пиши́ <sup>2</sup>	pishú <sup>2</sup>
Pres. Indeclinable Participle	—	—
Pres. Part. Active	пи́шущий	píshushchi
Pres. Part. Passive	—	—
Infinitive	писа́ть <sup>1</sup>	pisá't' <sup>1</sup>
Compound Future	бу́ду писа́ть	búdu pisá't'
Past	писа́ль	pisál
Conditional	писа́ль бы	pisálby
Past Indeclinable Participle	писа́въ	pisáf
Past Part. Active	писа́вший	pisáfshy
Past Part. Passive	пи́санный	písanny

<sup>1</sup> N.B. Russian с (s) is ALWAYS pronounced *ss* as in *hiss*.

<sup>2</sup> и after ш and ж sounds like ы (y), cf. p. 2, notes 5 and 7. It is important to remember that the и in the first syllable of this verb must be pronounced like the *i* in *marine*, not like the *i* in *pin*.

## CHAPTER 2

## THE ASPECTS OF THE VERB AND THEIR FORMATION

The aspects of the verb are varieties of the same verb which describe varieties of the same action, for instance :

уговáривать = *to try to persuade* (= *to urge*)

уговорíть = *to succeed in persuading* (= *to persuade*)

Aspects exist in English as well as in Russian, but they can only be expressed by means of auxiliary verbs, adverbs, or other additional words, e.g. :

*I used to read, I was reading, I read through*

*I read, I am reading, I often read*

*I shall read, I shall be reading, I shall read through*

In Russian they are expressed, as in English, by means of adverbs and, to a more limited extent than in English, by means of auxiliary verbs, but they are also expressed by the alteration of the verb itself.

This alteration is effected in some cases by prefixing prepositions to the verb, e.g. :

читáть = *to read*

прочитáть = *to read through*

in others by lengthening or amplifying the verb, e.g. :

уговорíть = *to persuade*

уговáривать = *to try to persuade*

in others again by the alteration of the vowel which connects the root with the infinitive ending, e.g. :

бросáть = *to throw often or continuously*

бросíть = *to throw once*

*Бросать*  
*Бросить*

or by the substitution of another syllable between the root and the infinitive ending, e.g. :

пры́гать = *to jump*

пры́гнуть = *to make a jump*

The number of aspects of any verb in any language is almost unlimited.

That is to say, any verb can be endlessly varied by the addition of adverbs or other words to express varieties of action.

But the number of aspects of the Russian verb which consist in the alteration of the verb itself is strictly limited. It is only these aspects which from the point of view of grammar have to be considered.

### The Imperfective and Perfective Aspects

The two main divisions of aspects are called *imperfective* and *perfective*. Every Russian verb belongs to one or the other, and almost all verbs exist in both aspects.<sup>1</sup> That is to say, each verb has an *imperfective* and a *perfective* form.

A verb of the *imperfective* aspect, or an *imperfective* verb, is one which describes an action of an incomplete or indefinite character, e.g. :

дѣлать = *to do (to do often or actually to be doing)*

читать = *to read (in a general way or actually)*

писать = *to write (to write much or to be writing)*

получать = *to receive (often)*

бросать = *to throw (continuously)*

All the tenses belonging to such *imperfective* verbs are themselves also *imperfective*.

They refer to actions which were incomplete or indefinite

<sup>1</sup> For the exceptions, cf. pp. 117, 157 and *R. G.*, p. 230.

смысловъ къ  
принадлежамъ глаголу

or habitual or frequent in the past, are so in the present, or will be so in the future, e.g. :

я дѣлалъ = *I was doing or used to do*

я дѣлаю = *I am doing or I do*

бѹду дѣлать = *I am going to do* (in a general way, not one particular thing)

я читалъ = *I was reading or used to read*

я читаю = *I am reading or I read*

бѹду читать = *I am going to read* (in a general way, not any particular thing)

A verb of the *perfective* aspect, or a *perfective* verb, is one which describes an action which has been or will be definitely completed, e.g. :

сдѣлать = *to finish doing*

прочитать = *to read through*

написать = *to finish writing*

получить = *to receive* (one particular thing)

бросить = *to throw* (one particular thing at one particular time)

All the tenses belonging to such *perfective* verbs are themselves also *perfective*. They refer to actions which were definitely completed in the past or will be so in the future, e.g. :

я сдѣлалъ = *I have done, I have finished doing, I did*

я сдѣлаю = *I shall do, shall accomplish* (cf. p. 8)

я прочиталъ = *I have read through*

я прочитаю = *I shall read through* (cf. p. 8)

я написалъ = *I have written, I wrote* (one particular thing)

я напишѹ = *I shall write (and finish)* (cf. p. 8)

It will be noticed that no actions taking place either actually in the present or habitually are described in this last paragraph dealing with the *perfective* verb.

The reason is this.

From the point of view of the Russian language any action which is habitual or frequent or is in actual progress must be described by an *imperfective* verb.

The tenses of the *perfective* aspect cannot be used to describe any such action (for the apparent exceptions to this rule see p. 16).

As a result of this a very curious development of the verb has taken place. The Russian verb possesses no future tense different in form from the present tense. The means of describing an incomplete, indefinite, habitual or frequent action in the future is to use the auxiliary verb

я б́уду = *I shall be*

followed by the infinitive of an *imperfective* verb, e.g. :

- я б́уду дѣлать = *I am going to do*  
 я б́уду читать = *I am going to read*  
 я б́уду писать = *I am going to write*  
 я б́уду бросать = *I am going to throw (to begin  
 throwing or keep throwing)*

The means of describing a complete or definite or single action in the future is to use the present tense of a *perfective* verb, e.g. :

- я сдѣлаю = *I shall do, I shall accomplish*  
 я прочитаю = *I shall read through*  
 я напишу́ = *I shall write (and finish)*  
 я получу́ = *I shall receive*  
 я бро́шу = *I shall throw*



That is to say, the present tense of the *perfective* aspect, or the *perfective* present, has taken the place of the definite future; *it is the perfective future*.

It must be remembered that it is, only *imperfective* infinitives which can be used with the auxiliary verb *бúду* to form the indefinite (*imperfective*) future.

### CHAPTER 3

#### EXAMPLES SHOWING HOW THE ASPECTS ARE USED

The chapters devoted to the various verbs in the course of this book give examples of the use of the tenses of these two aspects in this order :

Present

Future (*Imperfective*, with *бúду*)

Future (*Perfective*, ex-Present)

Past (*Imperfective*)

Past (*Perfective*)

Imperative (*Imperfective*)

Imperative (*Perfective*)

Infinitive (*Imperfective*)

Infinitive (*Perfective*)

Wherever necessary the principal parts of both aspects of the verb are given in full at the beginning of each chapter, and in the case of those tenses of any particular verb which are little used examples have not been forced.

A few remarks are here added on the use of the various tenses of both aspects, and on their English equivalents.

**Present**

This is used to describe incomplete actions actually in progress or of frequent or habitual occurrence :

я тепѣрь читаю	=	<i>I am now reading</i>
я много читаю	=	<i>I read a lot</i>
я не читаю	=	<i>I do not read</i>
я получаю газету	=	<i>I receive <sup>1</sup> a newspaper</i>
я часто получаю письма изъ Англии	} =	{ <i>I often receive letters from England</i>
я не получаю газеты <sup>2</sup>	=	<i>I don't receive <sup>1</sup> a paper</i>

**Future (Imperfective)**

This is used to describe incomplete actions in the future :  
я буду читать = *I am going to read* (unspecified things for an unspecified time)

я буду писать = *I am going to write* (in a general way, not one particular thing, not specifying what or for how long)

**Future (Perfective = ex-Present)**

This is used to describe any action in the future the completion of which is foreseen :

я сделаю это тепѣрь = *I shall do this now*

я напишу ему письмо = *I shall write him a letter*

я получу отвѣтъ завтра = *I shall receive the answer to-morrow*  
*am getting*

Negative actions in the future are naturally more frequently described by the *imperfective* future, as they are usually of unspecified duration.

<sup>1</sup> = *get, take in regularly.*

<sup>2</sup> The object of a transitive verb in a negative sentence is in the *genitive*, cf. pp. 53, 54.

But when the impossibility of doing one particular thing is implied then the *perfective* future can be used (cf. p. 16) :

я не б́уду чита́ть газе́ты = *I am not going to read the newspaper*

я не прочита́ю э́той газе́ты = *I shan't get this paper read*  
сего́дня *to-day*

### Past (*Imperfective*)

This is used to describe actions in the past which were habitual or frequent, in spite of the fact that each action was complete in itself, or an action which was in actual progress. It is also used in such phrases as: *have you (ever) read? I have read (at some time previously), I have not read, never read, &c.*

я мно́го чита́ль = (1) *I used to read a great deal*

(2) *I have read much*

вы чита́ли э́то? = *have you (ever) read this?*

чита́ль = *I have (read it at some time)*

не чита́ль = *I have not read it (ever)*

я писа́ль письмо́ = *I was writing a letter*

This tense is often used 'illogically', especially in the case of the *potential imperfective* verbs (cf. p. 13) when one would expect the *Perfective Past*, cf. *R. G.*, pp. 184, 185.

### Past (*Perfective*)

This is used to describe actions completed in the past :

я прочита́ль э́ту кни́гу = *I have read this book (through)*

я написа́ль письмо́ = *I have written a (or the) letter*

я вчера́ написа́ль = *I wrote yesterday*

я получи́ль письмо́ = *I have received a (or the) letter*

вы сде́лали э́то? = *have you done (or did you do) this?*

ещё не сде́лалъ = *I have not yet done (it)*

**Imperative** (*Imperfective*)

This is most generally used in prohibitions which are naturally usually of an indefinite extent :

не пишите ему́	=	<i>don't write to him</i>
не дѣлайте этого́	=	<i>don't do that</i>
не броса́йте	=	<i>do not throw</i>

If it is used in positive commands it means *continue doing what you are doing* :

пишите	=	<i>go on writing</i>
читайте	=	<i>go on reading</i>
(cf. pp. 157, 161, 275)		

**Imperative** (*Perfective*)

This is most generally used in positive commands :

напишите сей-часъ	=	<i>write immediately</i>
прочитайте тепѣрь	=	<i>read (this) now</i>
сдѣлайте это́ сегодня́	=	<i>do this to-day</i>
бросьте это́	=	<i>throw that away, drop it,</i> <i>'stop it'</i>

(cf. pp. 155, 159, 165, 183)

**Infinitive** (*Imperfective*)

This is used to describe actions the completion of which is not foreseen :

я люблю́ читать	=	<i>I like reading</i>
я не люблю́ писать	=	<i>I don't like writing</i>
дѣлать нечего́ <sup>1</sup>	=	<i>there is nothing to be done</i>

<sup>1</sup> Not to be confused with ничегó=*nothing* ; *it is nothing* ; *it doesn't matter* ; *all right*.

**Infinitive** (*Perfective*)

This is used to describe a single action or one the completion of which is foreseen, also in questions :

я хочу́ это́ прочита́ть = *I want to read this (through)*

я не могу́ это́го сде́лать = *I cannot do this (particular thing)*

на́до написа́ть сего́дня = *(this) must be written to-day*

нали́ть вамъ ещѐ ча́шку ? = *(shall I) pour you out another cup ?*

## CHAPTER 4

VARIATIONS OF THE IMPERFECTIVE AND  
PERFECTIVE ASPECTS**Double Imperfective Verbs**

A few verbs have two forms of the *imperfective* aspect, one to describe an action actually in progress, another to describe the same action if it is frequent or habitual, or vague and aimless, somewhat like the English *I am writing* and *I write*; but in Russian only a few verbs possess these two forms, which are called respectively: the *actual*<sup>1</sup> *imperfective* and the *potential*<sup>2</sup> *imperfective*. The most important verbs of this kind are mentioned on pp. 73, 90, 104, 109, 112, 240, 250.

Two sub-divisions of the two main divisions of the aspects must now be mentioned.

These are the verbs of *iterative*<sup>3</sup> aspect which are a sub-division of the *imperfective* verbs, and those of *semelfactive*<sup>4</sup> aspect which are a sub-division of the *perfective* verbs.

<sup>1</sup> Or *concrete*.

<sup>2</sup> Or *frequentative*, or *abstract*.

<sup>3</sup> Or *frequentative*.

<sup>4</sup> Or *instantaneous*.

**Iterative verbs**

These specify an action which is habitual or frequent ; they are a variety of *imperfective* verb. They may be either simple verbs (i.e. without prepositions) formed from other *imperfective* verbs, such as :

дѣлывать	= to do habitually or often
говаривать	= to say habitually or often

formed from

дѣлать	= to do
говорить	= to say, speak

These simple *iterative* verbs are very seldom used.

Or they may be compound verbs (i.e. with prepositions), such as :

передѣлывать	= to do over again
уговаривать	= to try to persuade

These are much commoner and serve the following purpose.

When an ordinary simple *imperfective* verb, e.g. :

дѣлать	= to do
говорить	= to say, speak

has become *perfective* by the prefixing of a preposition to it, e.g. :

сдѣлать	= to accomplish
поговорить	= to speak for a short time

that particular preposition (it may be almost any one, though some are much more commonly used for this purpose than others, e.g. : по-, с(ъ)-) loses all or much of its original meaning.

When other prepositions are prefixed to the same ordinary simple *imperfective* verb, e.g. :

дѣлать	= to do
передѣлать	= to do over again, to alter

that verb becomes *perfective* and the prepositions both retain their own meaning and influence that of the verb.

When this new verb, which is *perfective*

передѣлать = *to do over again*

убо́ворить = *to persuade successfully*

is required to describe a similar action which is *imperfective*, it is made *imperfective* by internal enlargement and becomes what is called *iterative*. Such *iterative* verbs are really only *imperfective* verbs of amplified form and meaning.

### Semelfactive verbs

These specify an action which is *instantaneous*; they are a variety of *perfective* verb. They are simple verbs and are formed by the infixing of the syllable -ну- between the root of the verb and the infinitive ending -ть.

Such verbs are :

пры́гнуть = *to give a jump*

пры́гать = *to jump (about)*

а́хнуть = *to say 'ah' once*

а́хать = *to say 'ah' repeatedly*

о́хнуть = *to say 'oh' once*

о́хать = *to say 'oh' repeatedly*

The same remarks apply to these as to the other perfective verbs (cp. pp. 7, 8).

The present tenses of such verbs—пры́гну, а́хну, о́хну—have, strictly speaking, future meaning.

At the same time the present tenses of these, and, indeed, of all *perfective* verbs, often retain the value of a present when used to describe an action which is not

continuous or in actual progress. The commonest instances of such use are :

(1) description of an instantaneous action which took place repeatedly in the past or is taking place repeatedly in the present (the equivalent of the historic present in English), e.g. :

‘Татьяна то вздохнёт,<sup>1</sup> то óхнет’ (Púshkin)

‘*Tatiana at one moment sighs, at another she moans*’, or ‘— *would sigh and moan*’

(2) description of a single action after such words as *whenever, as soon as, if ever*, e.g. :

какъ вспóмню то вре́мя (*inf.* вспóмнить, cf. p. 309)

*whenever (lit. how) I recollect that time*

когда уви́дишь знако́мое лицо́ (cf. p. 210)

*whenever one sees a familiar face*

(N.B. *one* is often rendered by the 2nd person singular)

какъ то́лько настúпитъ весна́ (cf. p. 135)

*as soon as spring approaches*

ёсли (or когда) подúмаешь, что . . . (or ёсли подúмать)

*if (or when) one thinks, that . . . (=perfective of дúмать)*

(3) negation of possibility of achievement, or description of a negative action, e.g. :

ничего́ не поймёшь (or не пойму́, cf. p. 170)!

*one can't (or I can't) understand a thing!*

не разберу́ (cf. p. 167) ; не разслýшу (cf. p. 217) ; не

разгляжу́ (cf. p. 215)

*I can't make out (decipher, distinguish) ; I can't hear well ; I can't see well (distinguish)*

па́дчерица какъ ни угодáетъ—ничёмъ не угодíтъ (folk-tale)

*however much the step-daughter tries to please (imperfective)—*

*she cannot by any means succeed in pleasing (perfective)*

волкъ лежи́тъ, не воро́хнется (folk-tale)

*the wolf lies (quiet), and doesn't budge*

<sup>1</sup> *Infinitive* вздохну́тъ=*to give a sigh* (вздыха́ть, вздыха́ю=*to sigh*).



Мельница на горкѣ не дрогнётъ крыломъ, надъ крутымъ  
оврагомъ лѣсъ не прошумитъ, рожь не колыхнётся,  
вольный вѣтеръ спитъ (Nikítin)

*The mill on the hillock moves not with its wing, above the steep gully  
the wood makes no sound, the rye does not wave, the wild wind  
sleeps (as in English never moves, never so much as . . .).*

## CHAPTER 5

### THE FORMATION OF THE PARTS OF THE VERB

The examples of verbs on pp. 3, 4 are enough to show that the Present tense of a verb can differ from the Infinitive not only in its ending but also in its substance. That is to say, there is often one stem for the Infinitive and another for the Present ; while some verbs have the same stem for both parts :

читáть	= to read	читаю	= I read
дúмать	= to think	дúмаю	= I think
дѣлать	= to do	дѣлаю	= I do
знать	= to know	знаю	= I know
стрóить	= to build	строю	= I build
говорítъ	= to speak	говорю	= I speak

others have two stems, such as :

жить	= to live	живу́	= I live
брáть	= to take	беру́	= I take
слать	= to send	шлю́	= I send
рисовáть <sup>1</sup>	= to draw	рисую́ <sup>1</sup>	= I draw
рѣзáть	= to cut	рѣжу́	= I cut
писáть <sup>1</sup>	= to write	пишú́	= I write

<sup>1</sup> Russian с (s) always = ss,

The number of verbs with only one stem is considerably larger than the number of those with two, but the latter include many of the commonest verbs in the language, and those which the beginner most needs to use.

In the chapters on the formation of the Present and of the Imperative (which is formed from the Present), verbs of both kinds, those with two stems and those with only one, have been drawn upon to illustrate these parts of the verb.

The number of these confusing verbs with two stems is limited, and all the most important and useful ones are mentioned in this volume.

The student will find these verbs with two stems puzzling, but he must remember that they have got to be learnt some time, and he may reflect that no useless or uncommon verbs have been included in this volume which merely illustrate rules or are merely exceptions to rules.

The few verbs which in Russian are radically different from the rest (the so-called 'irregular' verbs), those which in Russian as in other languages are the most common and the most useful of all, are given in full in the course of the book (cf. pp. 63, 90, 154, 179, 194, 241).

The formation of the various parts of the verb are dealt with in the following order :

- |                     |                     |
|---------------------|---------------------|
| (1) the Present,    | (2) the Imperative, |
| (3) the Infinitive, | (4) the Past.       |

The Imperative is formed from the Present, and the Past is formed from the Infinitive.

The other parts of the verb which are less urgently needed (Declinable and Indeclinable Participles) are not mentioned here except where they are particularly common ; they are fully described elsewhere (cf. *R. G.*, §§ 95-9).

## CHAPTER 6

## THE FORMATION OF THE PRESENT

The Russian regular verbs are divisible into two large classes, according to the personal endings of the present tense. The endings of those verbs which constitute the first class are :

SINGULAR	{	1st person	-у or -ю
		2nd person	-ешь
		3rd person	-етъ
PLURAL	{	1st person	-емъ
		2nd person	-ете
		3rd person	-утъ or -ютъ

The endings of those verbs which constitute the second class are :

SINGULAR	{	1st person	-ю or -у
		2nd person	-ишь
		3rd person	-итъ
PLURAL	{	1st person	-имъ
		2nd person	-ите
		3rd person	-ятъ or -атъ

Hence the verbs of the first class can be called e-verbs, those of the second class и-verbs.

**Class I or e-verbs**

## 1ST PERSON SINGULAR AND 3RD PERSON PLURAL

In the case of the verbs of the first or e-class these are *hard* (-у and -утъ) when the stem of the verb (the present-stem)

ends in a consonant (except in -л and in a very few cases in -р); the present-stem of a verb is always to be found in the 3rd person plural. Such are :

## СТЕМ

(The page-references against each verb refer to those pages where examples of the use of each verb are given.)

жив-	живу́	zhývú <sup>1</sup>	<i>I live</i>
(р. 313)	живу́ть	zhývút <sup>1</sup>	<i>they live</i>
ид-	иду́	idú	<i>I am going</i>
(pp. 75, 76)	иду́ть	idút	<i>they are going</i>
тян-	тяну́	tyánú <sup>2</sup>	<i>I am pulling</i>
	тяну́ть	tyánut	<i>they are pulling</i>
бер-	беру́	b(y)erú	<i>I take</i>
(р. 163)	беру́ть	b(y)erút	<i>they take</i>

They are *soft* (-ю and -ютъ) when the stem of the verb ends in a vowel, in -л, and in a very few cases in -р. Such are :

## СТЕМ

шл-	шлю́	shlyú	<i>I am sending</i>
(р. 236)	шлю́ть	shlyút	<i>they are sending</i>
дума-	думаю́	dúmayu	<i>I think</i>
(cf. p. 34)	думаю́ть	dúmayut	<i>they think</i>
рису-	рису́ю	risúyu <sup>3</sup>	<i>I draw (design)</i>
(cf. pp. 37, 38)	рису́ютъ	risúyut <sup>3</sup>	<i>they draw (design)</i>
бь-	бью́	byú	<i>I beat</i>
(cf. pp. 201, 327)	бью́ть	byút	<i>they beat</i>

<sup>1</sup> Cf. note 2 on p. 21.

<sup>2</sup> Colloquially pronounced : tyenú ; unaccented я sounds like e or и.

<sup>3</sup> Russian с (s) always = ss.

2ND AND 3RD PERSON SINGULAR  
1ST AND 2ND PERSON PLURAL

Examples of complete presents are now given with the addition of these four persons, which all begin with the *soft* or *palatal* vowel e.

When the accent is throughout the present on the personal endings, this vowel is always pronounced ě = yo, (y)o.

The ending of the 2nd person singular in *all* verbs is *always* pronounced as if spelt -шь.

As regards the accent, the 2nd person singular is the criterion ; on whichever syllable it is in that person on that syllable it remains throughout the rest of the tense.

Infinitive :	жить = <i>to live</i>	идти <sup>1</sup> = <i>to go</i>																																															
Present (stem жив-)	(p. 313)	(ид-) (pp. 75, 76)																																															
Sing.	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>1st</td> <td>→ живú<sup>2</sup></td> <td>zhyvú<sup>2</sup></td> <td>→ идú</td> <td>idú</td> </tr> <tr> <td>2nd</td> <td rowspan="3"> <table border="0"> <tr> <td>← живёшь</td> <td>zhyvyósh</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← живётъ</td> <td>zhyvyót</td> </tr> </table> </td> <td rowspan="3"> <table border="0"> <tr> <td>← идёшь</td> <td>idyósh</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← идётъ</td> <td>idyót</td> </tr> </table> </td> <td rowspan="3"> <table border="0"> <tr> <td>← идёмъ</td> <td>idyóm</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← идёте</td> <td>idyótye</td> </tr> </table> </td> </tr> <tr> <td>3rd</td> <td>← живётъ</td> <td>zhyvyót</td> <td>← идётъ</td> <td>idyót</td> </tr> </table>	1st	→ живú <sup>2</sup>	zhyvú <sup>2</sup>	→ идú	idú	2nd	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>← живёшь</td> <td>zhyvyósh</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← живётъ</td> <td>zhyvyót</td> </tr> </table>	← живёшь	zhyvyósh	← живётъ	zhyvyót	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>← идёшь</td> <td>idyósh</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← идётъ</td> <td>idyót</td> </tr> </table>	← идёшь	idyósh	← идётъ	idyót	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>← идёмъ</td> <td>idyóm</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← идёте</td> <td>idyótye</td> </tr> </table>	← идёмъ	idyóm	← идёте	idyótye	3rd	← живётъ	zhyvyót	← идётъ	idyót	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>1st</td> <td>← живёмъ</td> <td>zhyvyóm</td> <td>← идёмъ</td> <td>idyóm</td> </tr> <tr> <td>2nd</td> <td rowspan="2"> <table border="0"> <tr> <td>← живёте</td> <td>zhyvyótye</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← живутъ</td> <td>zhyvút</td> </tr> </table> </td> <td rowspan="2"> <table border="0"> <tr> <td>← идёте</td> <td>idyótye</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← идутъ</td> <td>idút</td> </tr> </table> </td> </tr> <tr> <td>3rd</td> <td>← живутъ</td> <td>zhyvút</td> <td>← идутъ</td> <td>idút</td> </tr> </table>	1st	← живёмъ	zhyvyóm	← идёмъ	idyóm	2nd	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>← живёте</td> <td>zhyvyótye</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← живутъ</td> <td>zhyvút</td> </tr> </table>	← живёте	zhyvyótye	← живутъ	zhyvút	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>← идёте</td> <td>idyótye</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← идутъ</td> <td>idút</td> </tr> </table>	← идёте	idyótye	← идутъ	idút	3rd	← живутъ	zhyvút	← идутъ	idút
1st	→ живú <sup>2</sup>	zhyvú <sup>2</sup>	→ идú	idú																																													
2nd	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>← живёшь</td> <td>zhyvyósh</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← живётъ</td> <td>zhyvyót</td> </tr> </table>	← живёшь	zhyvyósh	← живётъ	zhyvyót	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>← идёшь</td> <td>idyósh</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← идётъ</td> <td>idyót</td> </tr> </table>	← идёшь		idyósh	← идётъ	idyót	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>← идёмъ</td> <td>idyóm</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← идёте</td> <td>idyótye</td> </tr> </table>		← идёмъ	idyóm	← идёте	idyótye																																
← живёшь		zhyvyósh																																															
← живётъ		zhyvyót																																															
← идёшь	idyósh																																																
← идётъ	idyót																																																
← идёмъ	idyóm																																																
← идёте	idyótye																																																
3rd	← живётъ	zhyvyót	← идётъ	idyót																																													
1st	← живёмъ	zhyvyóm	← идёмъ	idyóm																																													
2nd	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>← живёте</td> <td>zhyvyótye</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← живутъ</td> <td>zhyvút</td> </tr> </table>	← живёте	zhyvyótye	← живутъ	zhyvút	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>← идёте</td> <td>idyótye</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← идутъ</td> <td>idút</td> </tr> </table>	← идёте	idyótye	← идутъ	idút																																							
← живёте		zhyvyótye																																															
← живутъ	zhyvút																																																
← идёте	idyótye																																																
← идутъ	idút																																																
3rd	← живутъ	zhyvút	← идутъ	idút																																													
Infinitive :	тянуть = <i>to pull</i>	брать = <i>to take</i>																																															
Present (stem тян-)		(бер-) (p. 163)																																															
Sing.	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>1st</td> <td>→ тяnú</td> <td>tyanú</td> <td>→ берú<sup>3</sup></td> <td>b(y)erú<sup>3</sup></td> </tr> <tr> <td>2nd</td> <td rowspan="2"> <table border="0"> <tr> <td>← тянешь<sup>3</sup></td> <td>tyányesh<sup>3</sup></td> </tr> <tr> <td>← тянетъ</td> <td>tyányet</td> </tr> </table> </td> <td rowspan="2"> <table border="0"> <tr> <td>← берёшь</td> <td>b(y)eryósh</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← берётъ</td> <td>b(y)eryót</td> </tr> </table> </td> <td rowspan="2"> <table border="0"> <tr> <td>← берёмъ</td> <td>b(y)eryóm</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← берёте</td> <td>b(y)eryótye</td> </tr> </table> </td> </tr> <tr> <td>3rd</td> <td>← тянетъ</td> <td>tyányet</td> <td>← берётъ</td> <td>b(y)eryót</td> </tr> </table>	1st	→ тяnú	tyanú	→ берú <sup>3</sup>	b(y)erú <sup>3</sup>	2nd	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>← тянешь<sup>3</sup></td> <td>tyányesh<sup>3</sup></td> </tr> <tr> <td>← тянетъ</td> <td>tyányet</td> </tr> </table>	← тянешь <sup>3</sup>	tyányesh <sup>3</sup>	← тянетъ	tyányet	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>← берёшь</td> <td>b(y)eryósh</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← берётъ</td> <td>b(y)eryót</td> </tr> </table>	← берёшь	b(y)eryósh	← берётъ	b(y)eryót	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>← берёмъ</td> <td>b(y)eryóm</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← берёте</td> <td>b(y)eryótye</td> </tr> </table>	← берёмъ	b(y)eryóm	← берёте	b(y)eryótye	3rd	← тянетъ	tyányet	← берётъ	b(y)eryót	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>1st</td> <td>← тянемъ</td> <td>tyányem</td> <td>← берёмъ</td> <td>b(y)eryóm</td> </tr> <tr> <td>2nd</td> <td rowspan="2"> <table border="0"> <tr> <td>← тянете</td> <td>tyányetye</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← тянутъ</td> <td>tyánut</td> </tr> </table> </td> <td rowspan="2"> <table border="0"> <tr> <td>← берёте</td> <td>b(y)eryótye</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← берутъ</td> <td>b(y)erút</td> </tr> </table> </td> </tr> <tr> <td>3rd</td> <td>← тянутъ</td> <td>tyánut</td> <td>← берутъ</td> <td>b(y)erút</td> </tr> </table>	1st	← тянемъ	tyányem	← берёмъ	b(y)eryóm	2nd	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>← тянете</td> <td>tyányetye</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← тянутъ</td> <td>tyánut</td> </tr> </table>	← тянете	tyányetye	← тянутъ	tyánut	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>← берёте</td> <td>b(y)eryótye</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← берутъ</td> <td>b(y)erút</td> </tr> </table>	← берёте	b(y)eryótye	← берутъ	b(y)erút	3rd	← тянутъ	tyánut	← берутъ	b(y)erút
1st	→ тяnú	tyanú	→ берú <sup>3</sup>	b(y)erú <sup>3</sup>																																													
2nd	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>← тянешь<sup>3</sup></td> <td>tyányesh<sup>3</sup></td> </tr> <tr> <td>← тянетъ</td> <td>tyányet</td> </tr> </table>	← тянешь <sup>3</sup>	tyányesh <sup>3</sup>	← тянетъ	tyányet	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>← берёшь</td> <td>b(y)eryósh</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← берётъ</td> <td>b(y)eryót</td> </tr> </table>	← берёшь	b(y)eryósh	← берётъ	b(y)eryót	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>← берёмъ</td> <td>b(y)eryóm</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← берёте</td> <td>b(y)eryótye</td> </tr> </table>	← берёмъ	b(y)eryóm	← берёте	b(y)eryótye																																		
← тянешь <sup>3</sup>		tyányesh <sup>3</sup>																																															
← тянетъ	tyányet																																																
← берёшь	b(y)eryósh																																																
← берётъ	b(y)eryót																																																
← берёмъ	b(y)eryóm																																																
← берёте	b(y)eryótye																																																
3rd	← тянетъ	tyányet	← берётъ	b(y)eryót																																													
1st	← тянемъ	tyányem	← берёмъ	b(y)eryóm																																													
2nd	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>← тянете</td> <td>tyányetye</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← тянутъ</td> <td>tyánut</td> </tr> </table>	← тянете	tyányetye	← тянутъ	tyánut	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>← берёте</td> <td>b(y)eryótye</td> </tr> <tr> <td>← берутъ</td> <td>b(y)erút</td> </tr> </table>	← берёте	b(y)eryótye	← берутъ	b(y)erút																																							
← тянете		tyányetye																																															
← тянутъ	tyánut																																																
← берёте	b(y)eryótye																																																
← берутъ	b(y)erút																																																
3rd	← тянутъ	tyánut	← берутъ	b(y)erút																																													

<sup>1</sup> Also spelt : итти.

<sup>2</sup> After the consonants ж and ш the vowel и is pronounced like ы, transliterated y, cf. notes 5 and 7 on p. 2.

<sup>3</sup> For the pronunciation of e after this consonant cf. note 6 on p. 2.

Infinitive :	слать = <i>to send</i>	думать = <i>to think</i>
Present (stem шл- <sup>1</sup> ) (p. 236)		(дума-) (cf. p. 34)
Sing. {	1st → шлю shlyú	→ думаю dúmayu
2nd {	(шлѣшь shlyósh	(думаешь <sup>2</sup> dúmayesh <sup>2</sup>
3rd {	шлѣтъ shlyót	думаешь <sup>2</sup> dúmayet <sup>2</sup>
Plur. {	1st { шлѣмъ shlyóm	{ думаемъ <sup>2</sup> dúmayem <sup>2</sup>
2nd {	шлѣте shlyótye	думаете <sup>2</sup> dúmayetye <sup>2</sup>
3rd →	шлютъ shlyút	→ думаютъ dúmayut

Infinitive :	рисовать = <i>to draw, design</i>	бить = <i>to beat, strike, hit</i>
Present (stem рису-) (cf. pp. 37, 38)		(бь-) (cf. pp. 201, 327)
Sing. {	1st → рису́ю <sup>3</sup> risúyu <sup>3</sup>	→ бью byú
2nd {	(рису́ешь risúyesh	(бьѣшь byósh
3rd {	рису́етъ risúyet	бьѣтъ byót
Plur. {	1st { рису́емъ risúyem	{ бьѣмъ byóm
2nd {	рису́ете risúyetye	бьѣте byótye
3rd →	рису́ютъ risúyut	→ бьютъ byút

If the present-stem ends in *r* or *k*, these consonants are changed by the *e* of the 2nd and 3rd person singular and 1st and 2nd person plural endings into *ж* and *ч* respectively, though they remain unchanged in the 1st person singular and 3rd person plural, e.g. :

<sup>1</sup> In the case of this unique verb the *y*-sound of the letters -ю, -ѣ in the personal endings has had the effect of transforming the *c*- of the root of this verb into ш-.

<sup>2</sup> In rapid speech the *y* in these four endings is slurred over, but in similar verbs with the accent on the *a* (e.g. знать, чита́ть), it is more pronounced.

<sup>3</sup> Russian *c* (*s*) always = *ss*.

Infinitive :	мочь = <i>to be able</i>	печь = <i>to bake</i>
Present (stem мог-)	(pp. 55-57)	(пек-) (cf. p. 198)
Sing. {	1st → могу́ magú	→ пеку́ <sup>1</sup> p(y)ekú <sup>1</sup>
2nd {	можешъ <sup>1</sup> mózhesh <sup>1</sup>	{ печешъ p(y)ech(y)ósh
3rd {	можетъ mózhet	{ печётъ p(y)ech(y)ót
Plur. {	1st { можемъ mózhem	{ печёмъ p(y)ech(y)óm
2nd {	можете mózhetye	{ печёте p(y)ech(y)ótye
3rd {	могутъ mógut	→ пеку́тъ p(y)ekúť

Certain verbs of this class with roots in г д з к т с х and ек change the last consonant of the root, which is apparent in the Infinitive and the Past, throughout the Present (and the Imperative) as follows :

Г	} become ж
Д	
З	
К	} become ч
Т	
С	} become ш
Х	
Т	} become щ
СК	

The number of verbs which undergo this change is small, but includes some which are extremely common. These must be learnt by observation and practice. The reasons which determine the retention, or the partial or total alteration of the last consonant of the root before the e of the personal endings belong to the domain of historical grammar (cf. *R. G.* §§ 87, 88). Examples :

<sup>1</sup> For the pronunciation of e after these consonants cf. note 6 on p. 2.

Infinitive :	рѣзать = <i>to cut</i>	плакать = <i>to weep</i>		
Present (root рѣз-) (p. 296)		(плак-) (p. 321)		
Sing.	1st → рѣжу	ryé <sup>a</sup> zhu	→ плачу	pláchu
	2nd { рѣжешь <sup>1</sup>	ryé <sup>a</sup> zhesh <sup>1</sup>	{ плачешь <sup>1</sup>	pláchesh <sup>1</sup>
	3rd { рѣжетъ	ryé <sup>a</sup> zhet	{ плачетъ	pláchet
Plur.	1st { рѣжемъ	ryé <sup>a</sup> zhem	{ плачемъ	pláchem
	2nd { рѣжете	ryé <sup>a</sup> zhetye	{ плачете	pláchetye
	3rd → рѣжутъ	ryé <sup>a</sup> zhut	→ плачутъ	pláchut

Infinitive :	писать = <i>to write</i>	искать = <i>to seek</i>		
Present (root пис-) (p. 231)		(иск-) (p. 288)		
Sing.	1st → пишу́	pishú	→ ищú	ishchú
	2nd { пишешь <sup>1</sup>	píshesh <sup>1</sup>	{ ищешь <sup>1</sup>	íshchesh <sup>1</sup>
	3rd { пишетъ	píshet	{ ищетъ	íshchet
Plur.	1st { пишемъ	píshem	{ ищемъ	íshchem
	2nd { пишете	píshetye	{ ищете	íshchetye
	3rd → пишутъ	píshut	→ ищутъ	íshchut

## CHAPTER 7

## THE FORMATION OF THE PRESENT

## Class II or и-verbs

## 1ST PERSON SINGULAR AND 3RD PERSON PLURAL

In the case of the verbs of the second or и-class these endings are *soft* (-ю and -ятъ) when the stem of the verb ends in

п б в м н л р or in a vowel, e.g.

<sup>1</sup> For the pronunciation of e after these consonants cf. note 6 on p. 2.



## Infinitive :

(The page-references against each verb refer to those pages where examples of the use of each verb are given.)

чинить (p. 283)	чиню	chinyú	<i>I mend</i>
чин-	чиня́тъ	chinyát	<i>they mend</i>
палить	палю	palyú	<i>I fire</i>
пал-	паля́тъ	palyát	<i>they fire</i>
курить (cf. p. 28)	курю	kuryú	<i>I smoke</i>
кур-	ку́рятъ	kúryat	<i>they smoke</i>
стоять (p. 115)	стою	stayú	<i>I stand</i>
сто-	стоя́тъ	stayát	<i>they stand</i>
боя́ться <sup>1</sup> (p. 319)	бою́сь	bayús'	<i>I fear</i>
бо-	бо́ятся <sup>2</sup>	bayátsya <sup>2</sup>	<i>they fear</i>
строить (cf. p. 282)	строю	stróyu	<i>I build</i>
стро-	стро́ятъ	stróyat	<i>they build</i>

In the case of those verbs of this class the stems of which end in

п б в м

the letter л is always inserted between the last consonant of the stem and the ending -ю of the 1st person singular. The present-stem is always to be found in the 3rd person plural of the Present. Examples :

## Infinitive :

спать (p. 275)	сплю	splyú	<i>I sleep</i>
сп-	спя́тъ	spyát	<i>they sleep</i>
готовить (p. 283)	готовлю	gatóvlyu	<i>I prepare, cook</i>
готов-	гото́вятъ	gatóvyat	<i>they prepare, cook</i>

<sup>1</sup> This is a reflexive verb ; for an example of one in full cf. p. 290.

<sup>2</sup> Colloquially pronounced : bayátsa, cf. p. 129.

## Infinitive :

люби́ть (p. 323)	люблю́	lyublyú	<i>I love, like</i>
люб-	лю́бятъ	lyúbyat	<i>they love, like</i>
корми́ть	кормлю́	karmlyú	<i>I feed (trans.)</i>
корм-	кóрмятъ	kórmyat	<i>they feed (,,)</i>

The endings are *hard* (-y and -atъ) when the stem ends in

ж ч ш щ, e.g. :

## Infinitive :

держи́ть (p. 297)	держу́	dyerzhú	<i>I hold</i>
держ-	де́ржатъ	dyé <sup>a</sup> rzhat	<i>they hold</i>
крича́ть	кричу́	krichú	<i>I cry out</i>
крич-	крича́тъ	krichát	<i>they cry out</i>
дыша́ть	дышу́	dyshú	<i>I breathe</i>
дыш-	ды́шатъ	dýshat	<i>they breathe</i>

In the case of those verbs of this class the stems of which end in

д т з с

these consonants in the 1st person singular become respectively

ж ч (or щ) ж ш

followed by the ending -y, after which the stem reappears in its original form ; the last consonant of the stem is retained also in the 3rd person plural with the ending -ятъ. The present-stem is always to be found in the 3rd person plural of the Present. Examples :

## Infinitive :

гляди́ть (p. 215)	гляжу́	glyazhú	<i>I glance</i>
гляд-	глядя́тъ	glyadyát	<i>they glance</i>

## Infinitive :

шутѣть	шучú	shuchú	<i>I joke</i>
шут-	шúтятъ	shútyat	<i>they joke</i>
блестѣть	блещú	blyeshchú	<i>I glitter</i>
блест-	блестя́тъ	blyestyát	<i>they glitter</i>
грозѣть	грозú	grazhú	<i>I threaten</i>
гроз-	грозя́тъ	grazyát	<i>they threaten</i>
красѣть	красу	kráshu	<i>I paint</i> <sup>1</sup>
крас-	крася́тъ	krásyat	<i>they paint</i> <sup>1</sup>

It is to be noticed that the endings of the 3rd person plural (-ятъ, -атъ) are, *when unaccented*, very frequently pronounced, even by well-educated people, as if they were written -ють, -уть, that is to say, they are confused with the 3rd person plural endings of the 1st or e-class. This is especially common after the consonants ж and ш, though it occurs after all of them. Thus, while the correct pronunciation is always -yat, -at, the forms of the 3rd person plural given above which are *unaccented on the ending* are often pronounced as follows :

kúryut	lyúbyut	dýshut
stróyut	kórmyut	shútyut
gatóvyut	dyé <sup>a</sup> rzhut	krásyut

## 2ND AND 3RD PERSON SINGULAR

## 1ST AND 2ND PERSON PLURAL

Examples of complete presents are now given with the addition of these four persons, which all begin with the *soft* or *palatal* vowel и.

It is not necessary to give in full all the verbs given on pp. 25-27.

<sup>1</sup> Sc. decorative painting, cf. p. 234.

As regards the accent, the rule given on p. 21 applies to all verbs in this class also.

Infinitive :	курить = <i>to smoke</i>	строить = <i>to build</i>
Present (stem кур-)	(cf. p. 254)	(стро-) (cf. p. 282)
Sing.	{ 1st → курю kuryú { 2nd (кúришь <sup>1</sup> kúrish <sup>1</sup> { 3rd кúрит kúrit	{ → стрóю stróyu { (стрóишь <sup>2</sup> stróyish <sup>2</sup> { стрóить <sup>2</sup> stróyit <sup>2</sup>
Plur.	{ 1st кúримъ kúrim { 2nd кúрите kúritye { 3rd кúрятъ kúryat	{ стрóимъ <sup>2</sup> stróyim <sup>2</sup> { стрóите <sup>2</sup> stróyitye <sup>2</sup> { → стрóятъ stróyat
Infinitive :	спать = <i>to sleep</i>	любить = <i>to like, love</i>
Present (stem сп-)	(p. 275)	(люб-) (p. 323)
Sing.	{ 1st → сплю splyú { 2nd (спишь <sup>1</sup> spish <sup>1</sup> { 3rd спит spit	{ → люблю lyublyú { (любишь <sup>1</sup> lyúbish <sup>1</sup> { любить lyúbit
Plur.	{ 1st спимъ spim { 2nd спите spítye { 3rd спятъ spyát	{ любимъ lyúbim { любите lyúbitye { → любятъ lyúbyat
Infinitive :	держать = <i>to hold</i>	кричать = <i>to shout</i>
Present (stem держ-)	(p. 297)	(крич-)
Sing.	{ 1st → держу dyerzhú { 2nd (дérжишь <sup>1</sup> dyé <sup>ar</sup> zhysh <sup>1</sup> { 3rd дérжить dyé <sup>ar</sup> zhyt	{ → кричу krichú { (кричишь <sup>1</sup> krichísh <sup>1</sup> { кричít krichít
Plur.	{ 1st дérжимъ dyé <sup>ar</sup> zhym { 2nd дérжите dyé <sup>ar</sup> zhytye { 3rd дérжатъ dyé <sup>ar</sup> zhat	{ кричимъ krichím { кричíte krichítye { → кричатъ krichát

<sup>1</sup> For the pronunciation of и after these consonants cf. note 7 on p. 2.

<sup>2</sup> In rapid speech the *y* in this case is slurred over, but it is more pronounced in those verbs, like стоять, where the accent throughout the present is on the end.

Infinitive :	дышáть = <i>to breathe</i>	глядѣть = <i>to glance</i>
Present (stem дыш-)		(гляд-) (cf. p. 215)
Sing.	1st → дышú dyshú	→ гляжú glyázhú
	2nd { дышишь <sup>1</sup> dýshysh <sup>1</sup>	{ глядишь <sup>1</sup> glyadyish <sup>1</sup>
	3rd { дышитъ dýshyt	{ глядитъ glyadyít
Plur.	1st { дышимъ dýshym	{ глядимъ glyadyím
	2nd { дышите dýshytye	{ глядите glyadyítYe
	3rd → дышатъ dýshat	→ глядятъ glyadyát

Infinitive :	шутítъ = <i>to joke</i>	красítъ = <i>to paint</i>
Present (stem шут-)		(крас-) (cf. p. 234)
Sing.	1st → шучú shuchú	→ красу kráshu
	2nd { шúтишь <sup>1</sup> shútyish <sup>1</sup>	{ красишь <sup>1</sup> krásish <sup>1</sup>
	3rd { шúтитъ shútyít	{ красítъ krásít
Plur.	1st { шúтимъ shútyím	{ красимъ krásím
	2nd { шúтите shútyítYe	{ красíte krásítYe
	3rd → шúтятъ shútyat	→ красятъ krásyat

## CHAPTER 8

THE FORMATION OF THE IMPERATIVE<sup>2</sup>

The Imperative is formed from the present-stem, which is always to be found in the 3rd person plural of the Present.

When the accent on the 1st person singular of the Present is on the personal ending, then the endings of the Imperative are :

2nd person singular = -í<sup>1</sup>

2nd person plural = -íte<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> For the pronunciation of *и* after the various consonants cf. note 7 on p. 2.

<sup>2</sup> For fuller treatment cf. *R. G.* pp. 168-170.

## Examples :

## (Verbs of Class I, or e-verbs)

Present	живу́ = <i>I live</i>	иду́ = <i>I am going</i>
Imperative	{ живи́      zhyví	{ иди́      idyí
	{ живи́те    zhyvítye	{ иди́те    idyítýe
	(p. 313)	(p. 80)
Present	тяну́ = <i>I am pulling</i>	беру́ = <i>I take</i>
Imperative	{ тяни́      tyanyí	{ бери́      b(y)erí
	{ тяни́те    tyanyítýe	{ бери́те    b(y)erítýe
	(cf. p. 20)	(p. 165)
Present	шлю́ = <i>I am sending</i>	пеку́ = <i>I bake</i>
Imperative	{ шли́      shlyí	{ пеки́      pekí
	{ шлите́    shlyítýe	{ пеки́те    pekítýe
	(p. 238)	(cf. p. 198)
Present	пишу́ = <i>I write</i>	ищу́ = <i>I seek</i>
Imperative	{ пиши́      pishú	{ ищи́      ishchí
	{ пишите́    pishítýe	{ ищите́    ishchítýe
	(p. 233)	(p. 288)
Present	(берегу́ <sup>1</sup> )	{ take care <sup>1</sup>
Imperative	{ береги́сь	{ beregís'
	{ береги́тесь	{ beregítýes'

## (Verbs of Class II, or и-verbs)

Present	чиню́ = <i>I mend</i>	пали́ю = <i>I fire</i>
Imperative	{ чини́      chinyí	{ пали́      palyí
	{ чини́те    chinyítýe	{ пали́те    palyítýe
	(p. 283)	

<sup>1</sup> Infinitive беречь, present берёгу́, бережётъ, берёгутъ = *to guard, keep*; used reflexively = *to be careful*.

Present	курю́ = <i>I smoke</i>	сплю́ = <i>I sleep</i>
Imperative	кури́      kurí	спи      spi
	кури́те      kuríteye	спи́те      spíteye
	(p. 254)	(p. 275)
Present	кормлю́ = <i>I feed (trans.)</i>	молчу́ <sup>1</sup> = <i>I am silent</i>
Imperative	корми́      karmí	молчи́      malchí
	корми́те      karmíteye	молчи́те      malchíteye
Present	держу́ = <i>I hold</i>	кричу́ = <i>I shout</i>
Imperative	держи́      dyerzhý	кричи́      kriehí
	держи́те      dyerzhíteye	кричи́те      kriehíteye
	(p. 297)	
Present	гляжу́ = <i>I glance</i>	шучу́ = <i>I joke</i>
Imperative	гляди́ <sup>2</sup> glyadyí	шути́      shutyí
	гляди́те      glyadíteye	шути́те      shutyíteye
	(p. 215)	

When the accent in the 1st person singular of the Present is on the stem, then the endings of the Imperative are :

2nd person singular = -ь

2nd person plural = -ьте

the accent remaining on the stem.

Examples :

(Verbs of Class I, or e-verbs)

Present	рѣжу́ = <i>I cut</i>	плачу́ = <i>I weep</i>
Imperative	рѣжь      ryé <sup>a</sup> sh	плачь      plach'
	рѣжьте      ryé <sup>a</sup> shtye	плачьте      plách'tye
	(p. 296)	(p. 321)

<sup>1</sup> *Infinitive* молча́ть, *present* молчу́, молчи́ть, молча́ть.

<sup>2</sup> The short form глядь ! is also used = *behold !*

(Verbs of Class II, or и-verbs)

Present	готовлю = <i>I prepare</i>	красю = <i>I paint</i>
Imperative	готовь gató'f'	крась kra's'
	готовьте gató'f'tye	красьте kra's'tye
	(p. 283)	(p. 234)

When the stem ends in a vowel, wherever the accent be, then the endings of the Imperative are :

2nd person singular = -й

2nd person plural = -йте

i.e. they form a diphthong with the stem.

In those cases where the personal ending of the 1st person singular of the Present is accented, or where the final vowel of the stem is accented, the accent remains on the Imperative diphthong-ending ; where the accent on the Present is further back, that on the Imperative is also further back. Examples :

(Verbs of Class I, or e-verbs <sup>1</sup>)

Present	думаю = <i>I think</i>	рисую = <i>I draw</i>
Imperative	думай dúmai	рисуй risú
	думайте dúmai'tye	рисуйте risúitye
	(cf. p. 34)	(cf. p. 37)

(Verbs of Class II, or и-verbs)

Present	(стою)	{stand, wait ! боюсь <sup>2</sup> = <i>I fear</i> <sup>2</sup>
Imperative	стой stó'i	ббйся bóisya
	стойте stóitye	ббйтесь bóityes'
	(p. 116)	(p. 319)

<sup>1</sup> The imperative of бью (бить, cf. pp. 20, 22) is irregular, cf. p. 201.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. p. 25.



## CHAPTER 9

## THE FORMATION OF THE INFINITIVE

The greatest difficulty for the beginner is not so much in the varieties of the Present as in those of the Infinitive.

As a rule only the Infinitive of the verbs is given in the dictionaries, and the beginner is naturally inclined to deduce the Present from the Infinitive according to the model of any verb he may happen to know.

This is impossible.

For instance, he knows the common verb читать = *to read*, which has the Present читаю; he will naturally try to form a Present from any other Infinitive in -ать, e.g. слать = *to send*, in the same way, and inevitably feels discouraged on finding the Present is not \*слаю, but шлю (cf. p. 22).

Conversely, of course, it is impossible to deduce the Infinitive from a knowledge of the Present.

Now the number of verbs like слать is strictly limited, but in Russian, as in other European languages, it is just these short, so-called 'irregular' verbs, which are the commonest and the most useful.

The beginner is therefore recommended to make notes of such verbs whenever he comes across them.

He will soon find that he has exhausted them, and also that many such verbs have other verbs derived from them, often equally common, which go 'regularly' according to the model.

For instance, he will before long discover that from слать there is a *derivative* verb посылать which means the same as its parent verb and is just as common, and has the Present посылаю, on the analogy of читаю.

On the other hand he will find that there are numerous *compounds* of *слать* which are conjugated just like it.

In the following chapters it is not proposed to depress the student with lists of Infinitives the Presents of which follow one or the other model, and further lists of the inevitable and usually more important exceptions.

It is intended rather to show the broad characteristics of the various groups of verbs as illustrated by their Infinitives.

## CHAPTER 10

### INFINITIVES IN -АТЬ

The vast majority of Russian verbs end in *-ать*, and they fall into several sub-divisions (cf. reference on p. 39).

#### I

There is, first of all, the large number of simple verbs, *imperfective* in aspect, many of them derived from nouns, which follow the model given on p. 22, e.g. :

знать, знаю (p. 173) = *to know*

читать, читаю (p. 224) = *to read*

думать, думаю (cf. p. 191) = *to think*

(derived from дума (*f.*) = *a thought*)

дѣлать, дѣлаю (p. 251) = *to do, make*

(derived from дѣло (*n.*) = *deed, work, affair, business*)

раб́отать, раб́отаю (p. 253) = *to work*

(derived from раб́ота (*f.*) = *work*)

Also a few verbs in class II, see pp. 3, 26, 156, 217, 275, 297.

## II

Then there are the verbs formed directly from these by the addition to them of prepositions, and *perfective* in aspect (cf. pp. 5, 7), e.g. :

узнáть, узнáю (p. 173)	= to find out
прочитáть, прочитáю (p. 224)	= to read through
перечитáть, перечитáю	= to read over
подúмáть, подúмаю	= to think for a bit
раздúмáть, раздúмаю	= to change one's mind
сдѣлáть, сдѣлаю (p. 251)	= to do, accomplish
передѣлáть, передѣлаю	= to do over again
зарабóтать, зарабóтаю	= to earn

Various other prepositions can, of course, be prefixed to such verbs, each different preposition altering more or less the meaning of the verb, but the verbs themselves still follow the same model : знáть and дѣлáть.

## III

Then there is a large number of compound verbs, *imperfective* in aspect, formed, by the addition of prepositions (each slightly altering the meaning of the verb), and by the amplification of the verb-stem or root, from the more difficult, so-called 'irregular' simple verbs, e.g. :

(братъ) собирáть, собирáю (p. 167)	= to collect
(влечь) привлекáть, привлекáю	= to attract
(гнестí) угнетáть, угнетáю	= to oppress
(ждать) ожидáть, ожидáю (p. 304)	= to await
(жечь) зажига́ть, зажига́ю (p. 283)	= to light
(жить) проживáть, проживáю (p. 313)	= to stay, sojourn
(мочь) помогáть, помогáю (p. 60)	= to help

(назв́ать) назыв́ать, назыв́аю (p. 265)	= to call by name
(нач́ать) начин́ать, начин́аю (p. 259)	= to begin
(прин́ять) приним́ать, приним́аю (p. 169)	= to receive
(слать) посыл́ать, посыл́аю (p. 236)	= to send
(умер́еть) умир́ать, умир́аю (p. 318)	= to die
(куп́ить) покуп́ать, покуп́аю (p. 202)	= to buy
(спать) засып́ать, засып́аю (p. 275)	= to fall asleep

## CHAPTER 11

## INFINITIVES IN -ВАТЬ

The largest sub-division of the verbs in -ать consists of those with Infinitives in -вать (-ивать, -ывать, -ѣвать).

These are, first, mostly compound verbs, *imperfective* in aspect, derived from verbs with stems ending in a vowel, e.g.:

(вить) разв́ивать, разв́иваю (p. 327)	= to develop
(бить) уб́ивать, уб́иваю (p. 318)	= to kill
(мыть) умыв́ать, умыв́аю (p. 276)	= to wash
(крыть) закрыв́ать, закрыв́аю (p. 278)	= to close
(быть) быв́ать, быв́аю (p. 292)	= { to be frequently or habitually
(дѣть) надѣ́вать, надѣ́ваю (pp. 143, 144)	= to put on
(пѣть) запѣ́вать, запѣ́ваю (p. 235)	= to start singing

N.B. In the case of the verbs звать (*pres.* зов́у), назыв́ать = to call, and жить (*pres.* жив́у), прожив́ать = to live, dwell, stay, the в is part of the original root of the word.

Secondly, it includes a very large number of *imperfective* compound verbs, often with frequentative meaning, which are formed from simple verbs and have Infinitives ending in -ывать and -ивать, such as :

прочѣть, прочѣтаю	= to read through
раздѣлывать, раздѣляю	= to hesitate
подѣлывать <sup>1</sup> , подѣляю <sup>1</sup>	= to do <sup>1</sup>
передѣлывать, передѣляю	= to do over again
зарабатывать <sup>2</sup> , зарабатываю <sup>2</sup>	= to earn
осматривать <sup>2</sup> , осматриваю <sup>2</sup>	= to examine
(derived from смотреть = to look, p. 208)	
разговаривать <sup>2</sup> , разговариваю <sup>2</sup>	= to converse
(derived from говорить = to speak, p. 185)	

Compound verbs of this category which are derived from simple verbs of the second class with the Infinitive in -ить show throughout the verb the same phonetic peculiarities as the first person singular of the simple verb, e.g. :

(готовить, готовлю, p. 283)	
заготавливать, заготавливаю	= to prepare
(спросить, спрошу, p. 266)	
спрашивать, спрашиваю	= to ask
(платить, плачу, p. 205)	
уплачивать, уплачиваю	= to pay back

Thirdly, the numerous derivative verbs in -овать and -евать are of different formation, and their Presents, though also of the first class, are characterized by the appearance of the syllables -ова- and -ева- of the Infinitive as -y- and -ю- throughout the Present and Imperative,<sup>3</sup> e.g. :

<sup>1</sup> For the colloquial meaning of this verb cf. p. 253.

<sup>2</sup> The o of the last syllable of those stems containing this letter becomes a in the amplified derivative form ; this a always bears the accent.

<sup>3</sup> N.B. The verb здороваться = to greet (cf. p. 314) does not come under this rule because here the letters -ов are part of the root of the word.

ковать, ку́ю, куй	= to forge, shoe
рисовать, рисую́, рисуй	= to draw (design)
танцовать, танцую́, танцуй	= to dance
советовать, советую́, советуй	= to advise
плевать, плюю́, плюй	= to spit
воевать, воюю́, воюй	= to make war

The verbs in -евать occasionally have -y- in the Present and Imperative for phonetic reasons :

ночевать, ночую́, ночуй	= to spend the night
-------------------------	----------------------

To this category of verbs belong a large number of verbs of comparatively recent formation derived from foreign languages, e.g. :

рекомендовать, рекомендую́	= to recommend, introduce
конкурировать, конкурирую́	= to compete
ремонтить, ремонтитью́	= $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{to redecorate (rooms)} \\ \text{to repair (houses)} \end{array} \right.$

Compound verbs derived direct from those in -овать and -евать by the addition of prepositions, and *perfective* in aspect, follow the same conjugation, e.g. :

расковать, раскую́	= to unshoe, unforge
перерисовать, перерисую́	= to re-draw
нарисовать, нарисую́	= to make a sketch
наплевать, наплюю́	= to spit upon
завоевать, завоюю́	= to conquer
переночевать, переночую́	= to spend one night

to which verbs also belongs by its formation :

упаковать, упакую́	= to pack a parcel
--------------------	--------------------

But verbs derived from these and further amplified, frequentative and *imperfective* in aspect, again revert to the first model, e.g. :

раскóвывать, раскóвываю	=	<i>to unshoe</i>
перерисóвывать, <sup>1</sup> перерисóвываю <sup>1</sup>	=	<i>to re-draw</i>
нарисóвывать, нарисóвываю	=	<i>to sketch</i>
наплёвывать, наплёываю	=	<i>to spit about</i>
завоёвывать, завоёываю	=	<i>to conquer</i>
упакóвывать, упаковóываю	=	<i>to pack parcels</i>

It will be noticed that some verbs in -ывать have two forms of the Present and both are used, e.g. :

завѣдывать	{ завѣдываю от завѣдую }	= <i>to look after, con- trol, manage</i>
испытывать	{ испытываю от испытую }	= <i>to experience</i>
обязывать	{ обязываю от обязую }	= <i>to oblige</i>

Three verbs in -вать, which have numerous compounds, are all *imperfective* and drop the syllable -ва- in the Present, but retain it in the Imperative ; these are :

Infinitive	Present	Imperative	
давать	даю	давай	= <i>to give</i> (pp. 179, 184)
and compounds of :			
-знавать e. g.	узнаю	узнавай	(pp. 174, 175)
-ставать e. g.	встаю	вставай	(pp. 129, 133)

The most important *two-stem* verbs in -ать will be found on pp. 120, 133, 158, 163, 185, 191, 231, 236, 259, 264, 281, 287, 296, 298, 301, 304, 321, 328 ; irregular verbs on pp. 90, 179, 241.

<sup>1</sup> The o in these stems does not change to a in the amplified derivative form, as it does in the case of those verbs mentioned on p. 37.

## CHAPTER 12

INFINITIVES IN -ЯТЬ, -(ЕР)ЕТЬ, -ѢТЬ, -ЫТЬ, -ИТЬ,  
-ОТЬ, -(Н)УТЬ

**Infinitives in -ЯТЬ**

These are not nearly so numerous as those in -ать. They are mostly *imperfective* and belong to the 1st or e-class, such as :

гулять, гуляю	= to walk
позволять, позволяю	= to permit
объяснять, объясняю	= to explain
поправлять, поправляю	= to correct
повторять, повторяю	= to repeat

But cf. pp. 115, 167–171, 319, 321, and *R. G.*, p. 153.

**Infinitives in -(ер)еть**

There are only four of these. They all belong to the 1st or e-class and follow the model :

тереть, тру, трётъ = to rub

The two most important are given on pp. 280, 318 ; they are referred to on p. 154 of the *R. G.*

**Infinitives in -ѢТЬ**

Many verbs in -ѢТЬ are derived from adjectives and denote a gradual process ; they belong to the first or e-class and are *imperfective* :

темнѣть, темнѣю	= to grow dark
худѣть, худѣю	= to grow thin
полнѣть, полнѣю	= to grow fat
старѣть, старѣю	= to grow old



With the addition of the prefix *по-* these become *perfective* (cf. p. 123). The most important variations will be found on pp. 63, 143, 160, 177, 208, 215, 235, 241, 281, 284, 301.

#### Infinitives in -ЫТЬ

There are only very few of these ; they belong to the 1st or e-class and mostly follow the verb :

МЫТЬ, МОЮ = *to wash* (transitive)

For variations and other examples cf. pp. 250, 278, 292. All the verbs in -ЫТЬ are given on pp. 151, 156, of the *R. G.*

#### Infinitives in -ИТЬ

The large majority of the verbs in -ИТЬ belong to the 2nd or н-class, cf. pp. 24-29. The most important variations will be found on pp. 199, 201, 277.

#### Infinitives in -ОТЬ

There are only five of these, and they are not very common verbs. They belong to the 1st or e-class and follow the model :

КОЛОТЬ, КОЛЮ, КОЛЕТЬ = *to pierce, to prick*

For the other verbs of this kind cf. *R. G.*, p. 155, where they are all given.

#### Infinitives in -(Н)УТЬ

These all belong to the 1st or e-class and fall into two large categories. The first includes verbs which are *imperfective* and denote a gradual process ; these are the so-called *inchoative* verbs, such as :

МЁРЗНУТЬ, МЁРЗНУ, МЁРЗНЕТЬ = *to be or get frozen, very cold*

The second includes verbs which quite on the contrary, curiously enough, are *perfective* and denote an instan-

taneous action ; these are the so-called *semelfactive* verbs, such as :

кíнуть, кíну, кíнетъ = *to fling*

There are only very few verbs which end in -уть (i.e. not in -нуть), e.g. :

дуть, дую, дуетъ = *to blow*

## CHAPTER 13

### INFINITIVES IN -ТИ, -ТЬ, -ЧЬ

There is another group of Infinitives which must be specially mentioned. These belong to those verbs in which the Infinitive ending -ть follows immediately on a stem which ends in a consonant. In some such cases the two consonants have undergone phonetic changes, so that the Infinitive appears disguised, in others the accent has shifted to the Infinitive, so that it appears not as -ть but as -ти. Such verbs (they are all given in *R. G.* § 88) are :

#### Stems in -б

грестí	гребú	гребётъ	<i>row</i>
--------	-------	---------	------------

#### Stems in -г

берéчь (p. 30)	берегú	бережётъ	<i>keep</i>
жечь (p. 283)	жгу	жжётъ	<i>burn (trans.)</i>
стричь (p. 278)	стригú	стрижётъ	<i>shear</i>
мочь (pp. 54-59)	могú	мóжетъ	<i>be able</i>
лечь (pp. 154-156)	лягú	ляжётъ	<i>lie down</i>

## Stems in -д

класть (pp. 149–153)	кладу́	кладётъ	<i>put</i>
пасть (pp. 299, 300)	паду́	падётъ	<i>fall</i>
вести́ <sup>1</sup> (pp. 112–114)	веду́	ведётъ	<i>lead</i>
ити́ <sup>2</sup> (pp. 73–83, 99)	иду́	идётъ	<i>go</i>
сѣсть (pp. 158, 159)	сѣду́	сѣдетъ	<i>sit down</i>

## Stems in -з

везти́ <sup>1</sup> (p. 109)	везу́	везётъ	<i>convey</i>
------------------------------	-------	--------	---------------

## Stems in -к

печь (pp. 23, 30, 198)	пеку́	печётъ	<i>bake</i>
------------------------	-------	--------	-------------

## Stems in -с

нести́ <sup>1</sup> (pp. 104–106)	несу́	несётъ	<i>carry</i>
-----------------------------------	-------	--------	--------------

## Stems in -т

мести́ (p. 46)	мету́	метётъ	<i>sweep</i>
прочѣсть (p. 224)	прочту́	прочтётъ	<i>read through</i>
расти́ (p. 47)	расту́	растётъ	<i>grow</i>

In the case of the stems in -г and -к, -гть and -ктъ have combined to form -чь, e.g. мочь from \*могть.

In the case of the stems in -б, -д, and -т *dissimilation* or *differentiation* has occurred (except in the case of ити́), i.e. -дть or -дти́ and -гть or -гти́ have become -сть or -сти, e.g. класть from \*кладть, вести́ from \*ведти́, мети́ from \*метти́, -бти becomes -сти, e.g. грести́ from \*грѣбти́.

<sup>1</sup> In composition with prepositions these sometimes appear as -вѣсть, -вѣзь, -нѣсть, e.g. принѣсть or принѣсти́=*to bring*.

<sup>2</sup> Also spelt иди́ (cf. pp. 21, 30, 47).

## CHAPTER 14

## THE FORMATION OF THE PAST

The Past in Russian is really an old form of the Past Participle Active, and not a tense, in the same way that the Present is. It has, therefore, no personal endings, and varies only in *gender* and *number* in agreement with the subject of the sentence.

In the case of all verbs the Infinitive of which ends in

-АТЬ, -ЯТЬ, -ѢТЬ, -ЫТЬ, -ИТЬ, -ОТЬ

it is formed by cutting off the ending -ТЬ of the Infinitive and substituting the following endings :

-ЛЪ, -ЛА, -ЛО ; -ЛИ

The first three are used for *any* person in the singular, varying according to the gender of the subject ; the fourth is used for *all* persons of the plural of whichever gender.

The accent is usually there where it is in the Infinitive, but sometimes, especially in verbs of one or two syllables, shifts to the ending in the case of the feminine and more rarely also of the neuter, or to the prefix (preposition) in compound verbs, or to the reflexive pronoun -ся in reflexive verbs.

Examples (cf. p. 17) :

ОНЪ ЧИТА́ЛЪ	=	<i>he was reading</i>
ОНА́ ДУ́МАЛА	=	<i>she was thinking</i>
ОНИ́ ДѢ́ЛАЛИ	=	<i>they were doing</i>
Я ЗНА́ЛЪ	=	<i>I knew (masc.)</i>
ОНИ́ СТРО́БИЛИ	=	<i>they were building</i>
ОНА́ ГОВОРИ́ЛА	=	<i>she was speaking, saying</i>

МЫ ЖИЛИ	=	<i>we used to live</i>
ОНИ БРАЛИ	=	<i>they used to take</i>
Я ПОСЛАЛЪ	=	<i>I have sent (masc. ; cf. p. 34)</i>
ОНА РИСОВАЛА	=	<i>she was drawing</i>
Я РѢЗАЛА	=	<i>I was cutting (fem.)</i>
ОНЪ ПИСАЛЪ	=	<i>he was writing</i>
ЭТО <sup>1</sup> БЫЛО	=	<i>this was, it was</i>
ОНА БЫЛА	=	<i>she was</i>
ОНЪ БЫЛЪ	=	<i>he was</i>
ОНИ БЫЛИ	=	<i>they were (masc., or masc. and fem.)</i>
ОНѢ БЫЛИ	=	<i>they were (fem.)</i>

In the case of the verbs with roots ending in consonants mentioned on pp. 42, 43 the endings of the Past are added immediately to the root, whereupon various changes occur :

(1) after б, г, з, к, and с, the -лъ of the masculine lapses owing to difficulty of pronunciation, but the other endings remain, e. g. :

inf.	{ <table> <tr> <td>ОНЪ МОГЪ</td> <td>mog</td> <td>=</td> <td><i>he</i></td> </tr> <tr> <td>ОНА МОГЛА</td> <td>maglá</td> <td>=</td> <td><i>she</i></td> </tr> <tr> <td>ОНО МОГЛО</td> <td>magló</td> <td>=</td> <td><i>it</i></td> </tr> <tr> <td>ОНИ МОГЛИ</td> <td>maglyí</td> <td>=</td> <td><i>they</i></td> </tr> </table> }	ОНЪ МОГЪ	mog	=	<i>he</i>	ОНА МОГЛА	maglá	=	<i>she</i>	ОНО МОГЛО	magló	=	<i>it</i>	ОНИ МОГЛИ	maglyí	=	<i>they</i>	} <i>could</i>				
ОНЪ МОГЪ		mog	=	<i>he</i>																		
ОНА МОГЛА		maglá	=	<i>she</i>																		
ОНО МОГЛО		magló	=	<i>it</i>																		
ОНИ МОГЛИ	maglyí	=	<i>they</i>																			
МОЧЬ, МОГ-																						
(p. 58)																						
inf.	{ <table> <tr> <td>ОНЪ ВѢЗЪ</td> <td>vyós</td> <td>=</td> <td><i>he</i></td> </tr> <tr> <td>ОНА ВЕЗЛА</td> <td>v(y)ezlá</td> <td>=</td> <td><i>she</i></td> </tr> <tr> <td>ОНО ВЕЗЛО</td> <td>v(y)ezló</td> <td>=</td> <td><i>it</i></td> </tr> <tr> <td>ОНИ ВЕЗЛИ</td> <td>v(y)ezlyí</td> <td>=</td> <td><i>they were conveying</i></td> </tr> </table> }	ОНЪ ВѢЗЪ	vyós	=	<i>he</i>	ОНА ВЕЗЛА	v(y)ezlá	=	<i>she</i>	ОНО ВЕЗЛО	v(y)ezló	=	<i>it</i>	ОНИ ВЕЗЛИ	v(y)ezlyí	=	<i>they were conveying</i>	} <i>was conveying</i>				
ОНЪ ВѢЗЪ		vyós	=	<i>he</i>																		
ОНА ВЕЗЛА		v(y)ezlá	=	<i>she</i>																		
ОНО ВЕЗЛО		v(y)ezló	=	<i>it</i>																		
ОНИ ВЕЗЛИ	v(y)ezlyí	=	<i>they were conveying</i>																			
ВЕЗТИ, ВЕЗ-																						
(p. 109)																						
inf.	{ <table> <tr> <td>Я НЕСЪ</td> <td>nyós</td> <td>=</td> <td><i>I was carrying (masc.)</i></td> </tr> <tr> <td>ТЫ НЕСЛА</td> <td>nyeslá</td> <td>=</td> <td><i>thou wast conveying</i></td> </tr> <tr> <td></td> <td></td> <td></td> <td><i>(fem.)</i></td> </tr> <tr> <td>ОНО НЕСЛО</td> <td>nyesló</td> <td>=</td> <td><i>it was carrying (neut.)</i></td> </tr> <tr> <td>МЫ НЕСЛИ</td> <td>nyeslyí</td> <td>=</td> <td><i>we were conveying</i></td> </tr> </table> }	Я НЕСЪ	nyós	=	<i>I was carrying (masc.)</i>	ТЫ НЕСЛА	nyeslá	=	<i>thou wast conveying</i>				<i>(fem.)</i>	ОНО НЕСЛО	nyesló	=	<i>it was carrying (neut.)</i>	МЫ НЕСЛИ	nyeslyí	=	<i>we were conveying</i>	
Я НЕСЪ		nyós	=	<i>I was carrying (masc.)</i>																		
ТЫ НЕСЛА		nyeslá	=	<i>thou wast conveying</i>																		
				<i>(fem.)</i>																		
ОНО НЕСЛО	nyesló	=	<i>it was carrying (neut.)</i>																			
МЫ НЕСЛИ	nyeslyí	=	<i>we were conveying</i>																			
НЕСТИ, НЕС-																						
(p. 106)																						

<sup>1</sup> This is much more commonly used for *it* than *онó*.

(2) stems ending in *д* and *т* lose their consonants before all four endings of the Past, e.g. :

Inf.	{ онъ вѣлъ    v(y)ól    = <i>he</i> она велá    v(y)elá   = <i>she</i> онó велó    v(y)eló   = <i>it</i> онí велí    v(y)elyí = <i>they were</i> }	} <i>was</i>	} <i>leading</i>
вести́, вед-			
(p. 113)			

inf.	{ мужи́къ мѣлъ    myól ба́ба мелá    m(y)elá дитя́ мелó    m(y)eló лю́ди мелí    m(y)elyí         }	} <i>was</i>	} <i>sweeping</i>
местí, мет-			
(p. 43)			

The verbs with Infinitive in *-(ep)éть* lose the *-еть* in the Past, and further the *-ль* of the masculine lapses, e.g. :

inf.	{ тѣрь    tyór тѣрла    tyórla тѣрло    tyórla тѣрли    tyórlýi         }	inf.	{ простѣрь    prastyór простѣрла    prastyórla простѣрло    prastyórla простѣрли    prastyórlýi         }
терѣть		} <i>prostereť</i> } <i>to stretch out</i>	
<i>to rub</i>			
(p. 40)			

inf.	{ ўмеръ    úm(y)er умерла́    um(y)erlá ўмерло    úm(y)erla ўмерли    úm(y)erlyi         }	inf.	{ заперъ    záp(y)er заперла́    zap(y)erlá заперло    záp(y)erla заперли    záp(y)erli         }
умерѣть		} <i>zaperéť</i> } <i>to bolt</i>	
<i>to die</i>			
(p. 318)			

Of the verbs in *-нуть*, those which connote a gradual process (the *inchoative* verbs, cf. p. 41) drop the syllable *-ну-*, whereupon in certain cases the *-ль* of the masculine lapses (cf. p. 45), e.g. :

inf.	{ мёрзъ myors мёрзла myórzla мёрзло myórzla мёрзли myórzlyi	inf.	{ стыль styl стýла stýla стýло stýla стýли stýlyi
мёрзнуть		стынуть	
<i>to get frozen</i>		<i>to grow cold</i>	
(p. 285)		(p. 285)	

Those which denote an instantaneous action (the *semelfactive* verbs, cf. p. 15) follow the rule given on p. 44, e.g. :

inf.	{ кинуль kínul кинула kínula кинуло kínula кинули kínulyi	inf.	{ смекнуль sm(y)eknúl смекну́ла sm(y)eknúla смекну́ло sm(y)eknúla смекну́ли sm(y)eknúlyi
кинуть		смекну́ть	
<i>to fling</i>		<i>to notice</i>	
(p. 295)			

But there are exceptions to both these rules, and some verbs have both forms of the Past (cf. *R. G.*, pp. 164, 165).

The verbs in -уть follow the rule given on p. 44.

The following verbs must be particularly noticed, as their Past are formed somewhat differently :

inf.	{ жёгъ zhok жгла zhgla жгло zhglo жгли zhglyi	inf.	{ лёгъ lyók легла lyeglá легло lyegló легли lyeglyi
жечь		лечь	
<i>to burn</i>		<i>to lie down</i>	
(p. 283)		(p. 154)	

inf.	{ шёлъ shol шла shlá шло shló шли shlyi	inf.	{ сѣлъ syé <sup>a</sup> l сѣла syé <sup>a</sup> la сѣло syé <sup>a</sup> la сѣли syé <sup>i</sup> lyi
ити́		сѣсть	
<i>to go</i>		<i>to sit down</i>	
(p. 78)		(p. 159)	

inf.	{ росъ ros <sup>1</sup> росла raslá <sup>1</sup> росло rasló <sup>1</sup> росли raslyi <sup>1</sup>	inf.	{ прочёлъ prachól прочла prachlá прочло prachló прочли prachlyi
расти́		проче́сть	
<i>to grow</i>		<i>to read through</i>	
(p. 313)		(p. 226)	

<sup>1</sup> Russian с (s) always = ss.

## CHAPTER 15

## THE FORMATION OF THE CONDITIONAL

This has been described in the *F. R. B.*, p. 29.

It is exactly the same for all verbs in the language.

It merely consists in the addition of the particle бы (a remnant of the original conditional, long obsolete, of the verb БЫТЬ = *to be*) to the Past.

This particle can either precede or follow the Past, but it cannot stand alone at the beginning of the sentence.

That is to say, if it precedes the verb at the beginning of a sentence, the personal pronoun, which is otherwise sometimes omitted, must be retained, or any other word which is the subject must stand first. Whether the particle бы precedes or follows the verb the meaning is the same.

There is only one form of the Conditional for the past and for the future.

Example :

я бы написáлъ } = *I should write, or should have written*  
 or (я) написáлъ бы }

The particle бы can also be attached to a conjunction instead of directly to the Past tense of a verb, e.g. :

если бы = *if*  
 хотя́ бы = *even if* (хотя́ : *although*)  
 хоть бы = *if only, if at least*  
 что́бы = *in order that, that*

Если бы вы написáли письмó вчера́, она́ бы получи́ла его́ сего́дня.

*If you had written the letter yesterday, she would have received it (or would receive it) to-day.*



Хотя́ бы вы написа́ли вчера́, она́ бы сего́дня не получи́ла.  
*Even if you had written yesterday, she would not have received (it, or would not receive it) to-day.*

Я написа́лъ вамъ, что́бы вы узна́ли пра́вду.  
*I have written (or wrote) you in order that you should learn the truth.*

But when the subject of a clause beginning with что́бы (= *in order that*) is the same as the subject of the principal sentence, then the past tense in the clause is replaced by the infinitive, что́бы remaining :

Я ему́ пишу́, что́бы узна́ть пра́вду.  
*I am writing to him in order to find out the truth.*

The particle бы is often used alone to express the desirability of doing anything :

Хорошо́ бы пойти́ = *it would be nice to go.*

The Conditional is also used in such sentences as these :

Я (не) хочу́, что́бы вы прочита́ли это́.  
*I (do not) want you to read this (lit. that you should read).*

Я (не) хоте́лъ, что́бы вы написа́ли ему́.  
*I (did not) want you to write him (lit. that you should write).*

It is to be noticed that the particle бы is very often curtailed and appears as бѣ.

When the conjunction если is thus curtailed, it is written in one word = елибѣ.

The conjunctions что́бы and чтобѣ are always written as one word.

Otherwise бѣ appears as a separate word in the sentence.

## CHAPTER 16

## QUESTIONS

The interrogative particle is *ли*.

This is the same syllable which appears in such words as *если* = *if* (contracted from *есть-ли*) and *неужели* = *is it possible that*.

It cannot stand at the beginning of a sentence.

It usually follows the verb, as in such sentences :

Знаёте ли вы, гдѣ онъ ? = *do you know where he is ?*  
 Говорите ли вы по-русски ? = *do you speak Russian ?*

But it can also follow other words which are specially emphasized in the question.

In questions such as *is he there ? is she here ?* it follows the word on which most emphasis is laid (cf. *F. R. B.*, pp. 13, 14) :

Онъ ли тамъ ? = *is he there ?*

Здѣсь ли она ? = *is she here ?*

Sentences which already contain an interrogative pronoun or adverb, such as *who, what, where, how*, do not need the addition of *ли* :

Что вы говорите ? = *what do you say ?*

Я не знаю, гдѣ онъ = *I don't know where he is.*

but

Я не знаю, тамъ ли онъ = *I don't know whether he is there.*

*Ли* followed by *ли* = *whether . . . or . . .*; in the folk tales the constantly repeated phrase :

Долго ли, коротко ли = *in course of time* (lit. *whether long, or short*)

The particle *ли* is in verse often curtailed to *-ль*, and is then usually joined to the preceding word by a hyphen.

Questions in conversation are more frequently asked without this particle than with it.

In such cases the ordinary order of words is followed, pronoun first and verb second, and the question is indicated by the tone of voice :

Вы знáете, гдѣ она́ ? = *do you know where she is ?*  
 Вы понимáете по-áнглийски ? = *do you understand English ?*

## CHAPTER 17

### NEGATIONS

The sign of the negative is *не*.

This always precedes the word which is negated, and it can stand at the beginning of a sentence :

Я не знáю = *I don't know.*  
 Не знáете ли вы ? = *do you not know ?*  
 Не онъ говорíль = *it was not he who was speaking.*  
 Онъ не говорíль = *he was not speaking.*

In Russian two negatives are often required where we only use one :

Никтó не знáеть = *no one knows.*  
 Я никогó не знáю = *I don't know anybody.*  
 Онъ ничегó не говорíтъ = *he says nothing.*

*Neither . . . nor . . .* = *ни . . . ни . . .*  
 Я не умѣю ни игрáть ни пѣть = *I can't play or sing* (cf. p. 177).

The particle *ни* alone is often used in indefinite sentences where in English there is no negative :

Что вы ни скажете, я вамъ не повѣрю.<sup>1</sup>

*Whatever you say (p. 185) I shall not believe you (lit. what you not shall say).*

The conditional, referring to the present or future, is often used in such sentences : "кто бы то ни было" *Nelson*

Кто бы онъ ни былъ = *whoever he may be.* XXV.

Кто бы она ни была = *whoever she may be.*

Что бы то ни было = *whatever it be (sc. anything, it doesn't matter what).*

Что бы вы ни говорили = *whatever you may say.*

This *что* must not be confused with *чтобы* = *in order that*, cf. pp. 41, 49. See note on p. 59.

It is very important to distinguish words beginning with the syllables *ни-*, *не-*, (and *нѣ-*) :

Я никогó не спрошú = *I shall ask (cf. p. 266) no one.*

Нéкого спросить = *there is no one to ask.*

Я ничегó не говорю = *I say nothing.*

Нéчего говорить = *there's nothing to be said, there's no denying it.*

Я никогдá не читаю = *I never read.*

Нéкогда читать = *there is no time to read.*

Я нѣкогда<sup>2</sup> много читалъ = *at one time (formerly) I used to read a lot.*

When pronouns such as *никтó* (*no one*), *ничтó* (*nothing*, but scarcely ever used in the nominative), *никакóй* (*of no*

\* <sup>1</sup> Вѣрить (*ipfv.*; *pres.* вѣрю, вѣрить, вѣрять, *past* вѣрилъ, *imper.* вѣрьте), повѣрить (*pfv.*) = *to believe*, takes the dative.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. the root *нѣ-* in words like *нѣкоторый* = *a certain*.

\* "Повѣрьте!" Believe me! Pushkin. E.O.

*kind*), and *нѣкого* and *нѣчего* are governed by a preposition, the latter is inserted between *ни* and the rest of the word, e.g. :

Онъ остáлся ни съ чѣмъ = *he remained with nothing* (sc. *got snubbed*).

Это ни на что не похóже = *that is not like anything* (sc. *is intolerable, monstrous*).

Какъ б́удто ни въ чѣмъ не бывáло = *as though nothing had happened, quite unruffled* (lit. *as though it had never been in nothing*, cf. p. 292).

Ни въ какóмъ сл́учаѣ = *in no case, not under any circumstances*.

Ни за чтó (acc.) на свѣтѣ = *not for anything in the world, not in these trousers*.

‘Благодарю васъ очень !’ — ‘Нѣ за что (acc.) !’

‘*I thank you very much !*’ — ‘*Don't mention it*’ (lit. *there is nothing for what*, sc. *to thank*).

There is a rule that the object in a negative sentence must always be in the genitive, and generally speaking this is adhered to.

In the case of animate beings in the singular and plural of the masculine and the plural of the feminine, the accusative and genitive are in any case identical (cf. *F. R. B.*, p. 164).

It is with inanimate masculine things and the singular of feminine nouns and adjectives that doubt sometimes arises. It is always correct to say, for instance :

Я не ви́жу гóрода = *I can't (or don't) see the (or a) town*.

Я не слы́шу пóѣзда = *I can't (or don't) hear the (or a) train*.

Я ея́ не знáю = *I don't know her*.

But in practice this rule both in literature and in conversa-

tion is rather loosely observed. For instance, it is possible to say :

Онъ не любитъ своѣй женѣ	}	=	<i>He does not love (or like)</i>
or Онъ не любитъ свою жену			
Я не могу́ читать́ этой́ кни́ги	}	=	<i>I can't read this book.</i>
or Я не могу́ читать́ эту́ кни́гу			

Such instances are often to be explained by the fact that the verb may be looked at in various ways.

Thus не любитъ may mean either *he does not love, does not care for*, or else *dislikes*. In не могу́ читать the emphasis may be either on *I can't* or else on the word *read*; in the latter case the accusative is preferred.

As a general rule it may be said that while it is never wrong to put the object in the genitive, it sometimes sounds a little pedantic. In colloquial conversation the accusative is often used where the genitive is strictly correct.

For examples of the verbs *to be* and *to have* used negatively, cf. *F. R. B.*, chapters 32 and 41.

## CHAPTER 18

TO-BE-ABLE, I CAN: МОЧЬ, МОГУ́

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	не-с. в.		совершенный	
	[мочь	мо'ch']	[смочь	смо'ch']
<i>Present</i>				
(я) могу́	magú		смогу́	smagú
(ты) можешь	mózhesh			&c.
(онъ) можетъ	mózheth			
(мы) можемъ	mózhem			
(вы) можете	mózhetye			
(они́) могутъ	mógut			

	<i>Imperfective</i>	<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Past</i>			
(ОНЪ) МОГЪ	мок	смогъ	smok
(ОНА) МОГЛА	maglá		&c.
(ОНО) МОГЛО	magló		
(ОНИ) МОГЛИ	maglyí		

### Present

(In such phrases as *I can see, I can hear*, the presents of the verbs видѣть and слышать are usually sufficient without могу, cf. pp. 208, 218.)

Можетъ быть отъ быть можетъ (abbrev. : м.б.).

*It may be* (this is the ordinary phrase for *perhaps*).

Это не можетъ быть.                      Можетъ случиться.

*It cannot be.                                      It may happen.*

Можете ли вы мнѣ сказать? — объяснить мнѣ?

*Can you tell me? — explain to me?*

Я могу вамъ сказать; не могу вамъ сказать.

*I can tell you; (I) cannot tell you.*

Я не могу понять васъ.

*I cannot understand you.*

Я не могу знать, баринъ (барыня, барышня).

*I can't tell (lit. know), sir (madam, miss).*

Я этого терпѣть не могу.

*I can't stand (lit. suffer, endure) this.*

Я нигдѣ не могу найти своихъ вещей.

*I can't find my things anywhere (lit. nowhere).*

Можете ли вы найти мнѣ экземпляръ этой книги? Я не могу вамъ обѣщать.

*Can you find me a copy of this book? I can't promise you.*

Я не могу заплатить вамъ тепёръ.

*I can't pay you now.*

Я (не) могу прийти сегодня обѣдать.

*I can(not) come and dine to-day.*

Отчего вы не можете прийти сегодня ?

*Why can't you come to-day ?*

Ему такъ плохо, что онъ не можетъ выходитьъ.

*He is so bad that he can't go out (of doors).*

Вы можете это сдѣлать для меня сегодня ?

*Can you do this for me to-day ?*

Вы не можете себѣ представить, какъ это хорошó.

*You cannot imagine how nice it is.*

Гдѣ я могу купить папирóсы (маркí, открытки) ?

*Where can I buy cigarettes (stamps, postcards) ?*

Гдѣ я могу найти такую вещь (такíя вѣщи) ?

*Where can I find a thing like this (things like these) ?*

Вы можете обѣщать ?

Я не могу разобратьъ.

*Can you promise ?*

*I cannot decipher (make out).*

Вы можете это держать для меня на минуточку ?

*Can you hold this for me for a minute ?*

Я (не) могу вамъ это объяснить.

*I can(not) explain this to you.*

Я не могу поднять этотъ сундукъ (эту тяжесть).

*I cannot lift this chest (this load).*

Я не могу это нести одинъ (fem. одна).

*I can't carry this alone.*

Я не могу затворить (отворить) эту дверь.

*I cannot shut (open) this door.*



Я не могу закрыть (открыть) этот ящикъ.

*I cannot close (open) this drawer.*

Я не могу замкнуть (отомкнуть) этот чемоданъ.

*I cannot lock (unlock) this trunk (or bag).*

For phrases such as : *I cannot help*, cf. p. 62.

For phrases such as : *to be able to talk languages*, cf. pp. 178, 186.

### Future (Ipfv.)

The verb бѹду is not used with мочь, and so a paraphrase has to be employed :

Онъ долго не бѹдетъ въ состоянїи ѣхать.

*He will not be able to travel for a long time yet.*

Она́ не бѹдетъ въ состоянїи пѣть завтра.

*She will not be able to sing to-morrow.*

(Быть въ состоянїи = *to be in a position, condition*, cf. p. 117.)

### Future (Pfv.)

The perfective verb смогу = *I shall be able*, is seldom used. The present often takes its place, as in English, e.g. :

Я могу пойти туда завтра.

*I can go there (lit. thither) to-morrow.*

Если (я) могу, то (я) приду завтра.

*If I can, then I will come to-morrow.*

Если вы можете это сдѣлать, я бѹду вамъ очень благодаренъ (fem. благодарна).

*If you can do this, I shall be very grateful.*

In such phrases *I can* really stands for *I shall be able* in both languages. The verbs сумѣю = *I shall know how to*, and успею = *I shall have time to*, can also be used occasionally instead of смогу, cf. pp. 178, 305.

**Past (Ipfv.)**

Я бчень жалѣю, что вы не могли прийти вчера.  
*I am very sorry that you were unable to come yesterday.*

Я нигдѣ не могъ найти васъ.  
*I couldn't find you anywhere.*

Она́ ничегó не могла́ намъ сказать.  
*She couldn't tell us anything.*

Мы никогó не могли видѣть.  
*We couldn't see any one.*

Никтó не могъ меня́ понять.  
*Nobody could understand me.*

Я не могъ слышать, что́ онъ говори́лъ (cf. note on p. 59).  
*I couldn't hear what he was saying.*

**Past (Pfv.)**

This is very seldom used ; cf. pp. 178, 305.

**Conditional (Ipfv.), cf. pp. 48, 49.**

Если́бы я могъ, то я бы пришёлъ.  
*If I had been able, I should (have) come.*

Если́бы я могъ, то я бы пошёлъ.  
*If I could, I should go (or have gone).*

Вы бы могли́ прийти́, если́бы вы хотѣли.  
*You could (have) come, if you (had) wished.*

The conditional can be used with reference either to the past or to the future, and such sentences as those given above can be translated either way, according to the general context.

The Infinitives of these verbs are very seldom used.

## Cognate expressions

Можно = *one may, it is possible, permitted.*

Можно сказа́ть = *one may say.*

Можно кури́ть ? = *may one smoke ?*

Можно мнѣ попроси́ть васъ ? = *may I ask you ?*

Можно, то́лько осто́рожно = *you may, but be careful (prov.)*

[Нельзя́ = *one may not, one can't, it is impossible, forbidden,*  
is commoner than не можно́.]

Нельзя́ кури́ть = *one mayn't smoke.*

Нельзя́ туда́ входи́ть = *it is forbidden to enter there.*

Нельзя́ тамъ ходи́ть = *you mayn't walk about there.]*

Возможно́ = *it is possible ; возможность (f.) = possibility.*

Возможно́, что онъ приде́тъ : *it is possible that he will*  
*come.*

Э́то о́чень (совсе́мъ) возмо́жно = *that is very (quite) pos-*  
*sible.*

Невозмо́жно = *it is impossible.*

Э́то невозмо́жно = *that is impossible.*

Невозмо́жно пони́ять = *it is impossible to understand.*

Невозмо́жно, что́бы э́то бы́ло такъ = *it is impossible that*  
*this should be so (the conditional is used in this kind*  
*of sentence).*

[Вѣроя́тно = *it is probable.* Невѣроя́тно = *it is improbable.*]

## NOTE

In Russian a comma is *always* placed before *every* subordinate sentence ; что́ = *what* is usually accented in these cases to differentiate it from the conjunction что = *that*.

## CHAPTER 19

## TO HELP: ПОМОГА́ТЬ, ПОМО́ЧЬ

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	помога́ть	pomagáit'	помо́чь	pomóich'
<i>Present</i>	(я) помога́ю	pomagáyu	помогу́	pomagú
	(онъ) помога́етъ	pomagáyet	помо́жетъ	pomózhët
	(они́) помога́ютъ	pomagáyut	помо́гутъ	pomógut
<i>Past</i>	(онъ) помога́лъ	pomagál	помо́гъ	pomók
	(она́) помога́ла	pomagála	помо́гла	pomaglá
	(они́) помога́ли	pomagályi	помо́гли	pomaglyi
<i>Imperative</i>	[помога́йте pomagáitye]		помоги́те	pomagítye
	These verbs are derived directly from мочь = <i>to be able</i> .			

**Present**

Кто́-нибудь вамъ помога́етъ? Никто́ мнѣ не помога́етъ.  
*Does anybody help you? Nobody helps me.*

Вы мнѣ (ниско́лько) не помо́гаете, а то́лько мѣша́ете.<sup>1</sup>  
*You don't help me (in the least), you only hinder me.*

Э́то мнѣ о́чень помога́етъ.  
*That is of great help to me.*

**Future (Ipfv.)**

Кто́ бу́детъ вамъ помога́ть съ ва́шей рабо́той?  
*Who is going to help you with your work?*

<sup>1</sup> Мѣша́ть (*ipfv.*; *pres.* мѣша́ю) = *to hinder, obstruct, be unpleasant.*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Э́то ниско́лько (о́г ниче́го) не помо́жетъ.

*That won't be of the least help.*

Я помо́гу вамъ. Вы мнѣ помо́жете ?

*I will help you. Will you help me ?*

Мнѣ кто́-нибудь навѣ́рно (вѣ́роятно) помо́жетъ.

*Somebody will be sure to (will probably) help me.*

**Past (Ipfv.)**

Вамъ помага́тъ кто́-нибудь съ ва́шими уро́ками ?

*Did anybody help you with your lessons ?*

- когда я бѣдны́хъ помога́ла,

г.о.

**Past (Pfv.)**

Э́то вамъ ско́лько-нибудь помо́гло ?

*Did that help you at all ?*

Отче́го вы мнѣ не помо́гли ?

*Why didn't you help me ?*

**Imperative (Pfv. ; ipfv. not used)**

Помо́гите мнѣ понести́ э́ти ве́щи ; — подня́ть э́то.

*Help me carry these things ; — to lift this.*

Помо́гите мнѣ откры́ть (закры́ть) э́то окно́.

*Help me to open (to shut) this window.*

**Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

Она́ лю́битъ помага́ть други́мъ.

*She likes helping others.*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Помо́чь вамъ ? Я не могу́ вамъ помо́чь.

*Shall I help you ? I cannot help you.*

Прошú васъ помóчь мнѣ объяснítься.

*I beg you (please) to help me to explain myself.*

Мóжете ли вы мнѣ помóчь, пожáлуйста ?

*Can you help me, please ?*

The phrase *I cannot help* is rendered in Russian as follows :

Я не могу не кáшлять, чихáть, зѣвáть.

*I can't help coughing, sneezing, yawning.*

Я это дѣлаю невóльно.

*I can't help doing it (lit. I do it involuntarily).*

Нéчего дѣлать. Что-же (ог чтожь) я могу дѣлать ? ог что мнѣ дѣлать ?

*It can't be helped. How can I help it ?*

This verb (помагáть, помóчь) cannot be used to render the phrase : *to help any one or oneself to food*, cf. pp. 151, 164.

#### Cognate word

Пóмощь (*f.*) = *help* ; съ ёго пóмощью = *with his help*, благодаря вáшей пóмощи = *thanks to your help*.

## CHAPTER 20

### TO WANT, TO WISH, SHOULD LIKE: ХОТѢТЬ, ЖЕЛÁТЬ

This is one of the 'irregular' verbs ; the first three persons (singular) belong to the e-class, the second three (plural) to the n-class. Next to it is given an alternative (regular) verb meaning *to wish*, the use of which will be explained later. Both are *imperfective*.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Imperfective</i>	<i>Imperfective</i>	
хотѣть	(k)hatyé't'	желáть	zhelá't'
<i>Present</i>			
(я) хочú	(k)hachú	желáю	zheláyu
(ты) хочешь	(k)hóchesh	желáешь	zheláyesh
(онъ) хочеть	(k)hóchet	желáеть	zheláyet
(мы) хотímъ	(k)hatyím	желáемъ	zheláyem
(вы) хотíte	(k)hatyít'e	желáете	zheláyetye
(онí) хотя́тъ	(k)hatyát	желáютъ	zheláyut
<i>Past</i>			
(онъ) хотѣлъ	(k)hatyé'l	желáлъ	zhelál

Whenever, as in this and in subsequent verbs, the feminine and plural of the *Past* are not added, it is because the accent is fixed on the same syllable as in the masculine.

Generally speaking, желáть is considered a little more polite than хотѣть, but in this way, that хотѣть is rather used when speaking of oneself, желáть when addressing anybody else. Nowadays, however, хотѣть is more used when talking to one's friends or acquaintances, желáть having come to be considered too ceremonious. Servants, waiters, shop-attendants, &c., always use желáть when addressing employers or customers. In ordinary conversation amongst educated people желáть is only used at all commonly of conveying 'good wishes', &c., and is then used in the first person singular. Examples of both verbs are placed together under the headings of the various tenses.

### Present

Я хочú пойти въ банкъ, на почту, домой.

*I want to go to the bank, to the post-office, home.*

Кудá вы хотíte (желáете) пойти (поѣхать) ?

*Where do you want to go to (to drive, travel to) ?*

«Только бы мы потомъ ни жили, я хочú, чтобы мы съ тóмою не забóили, этой ночи огневой.» Тургеневъ.

Когда вы хотите ѣхать?—вернуться (возвратиться)?  
*When do you wish (mean) to depart (to start)?—to return?*

Я хочу ѣхать завтра. Какъ вы хотите!  
*I wish to depart to-morrow. Just as you like!*

Когда вы хотите (желаете) пить чай (кофе), обѣдать, ѹжинать, завтракать, спать ложиться, вставать?  
*When do you wish (mean) to breakfast, to dine, to sup, to lunch, to go to bed, to get up?*

Въ какомъ часу вы желаете, чтобы васъ разбудили (въ к. ч. вы прикажете разбудить васъ, cf. pp. 193, 276)?  
*At what hour do you wish to be called (waked)?*

Вы хотите (желаете) ещё что-нибудь?  
*Do you want anything further?*

Вы хотите (желаете) ещё немножко покушать?  
*Do you wish to eat a little more? (cf. p. 195)*

Я хочу ещё немножко этого блюда.  
*I want a little more of this dish?*

Я хочу послать эти вещи въ стирку.  
*I want to send these things to the wash.*

Я хочу пойти въ оперу, въ балетъ, въ театръ, въ варьетѣ, въ кинематографъ, въ бани.  
*I want to go to the opera, the ballet, the theatre, the music-hall, the cinematograph, the baths.*

Я хочу поѣхать въ Ригу, въ Москву, въ Кіевъ, въ Гельсингфорсъ, въ Варшаву, въ Архангельскъ, въ Одессу.  
*I want to go to Riga, Moscow, Kiev, Helsingfors, Warsaw, Archangel, Odessa.*

Я хочу васъ что-то (огъ кое-что) спросить объ этомъ.  
*I want to ask you something about this.*



Я хочу́ купитъ папиросъ, цигаръ, табакú, спичекъ, марокъ, открытокъ, почтовой бума́ги, конвертовъ, черниль.

*I want to buy some cigarettes, cigars, tobacco, matches, stamps, post-cards, writing-paper, envelopes, ink.*

Я хочу́ комнату съ одной кроватью (съ двумя кроватями), чистую, свѣтлую, покойную, и не слишкомъ дорогую.

*I want a room with one bed (with two beds), clean, light, and quiet, and not too dear.*

In such phrases as the following the verb хотѣть followed by сказать is the equivalent of the English to mean when used of persons (cf. p. 175): (or *birds*) "какъ будто хотѣла она сказать" *As if she*

Что вы хотѣте сказать?

*What do you wish to say? = What do you mean?*

Я хочу́ сказать. Я не то хочу́ сказать.

*I mean. That is not what I mean.*

The verb хотѣть is very frequently used reflexively impersonally, when it becomes a little less emphatic and rather more polite:

Мнѣ хóчется пить, ѣсть, спать, лечь, сѣсть, закури́ть.

*I want to drink, to eat, to sleep (sc. I am thirsty, hungry, sleepy), to lie down, to sit down, to have a smoke.*

Чего́ вамъ хóчется? 'Не такъ живи́, какъ хóчется.'

*What (lit. of what) do you want? You must not do just as you like (proverb).*

Жела́ю вамъ счастливаго но́ваго го́да!

*I wish you a happy New Year! (genitive case)*

Жела́ю вамъ всего́ хоро́шаго (всего́ лу́чшаго)!

*I wish you everything good (everything of the best)!*

(A common phrase on saying good-bye or at the end of a letter.)

1809.1

F

"Для чего́ на свѣтъ явля́ется хóчется, } Koltsov.  
"Облетѣть его́ ду́ша про́сится? } XVIII.

Желáю вамъ счастливаго путі! Здрáвья желáю!

*Bon voyage! = I wish you a good journey! Your health!*

An equally common way of conveying good wishes is to use the verb *to congratulate*, followed by *съ* and the instrumental case :

Поздравляю васъ съ днёмъ вáшего рождénія, съ днёмъ вáшего áнгела (съ именинами), съ Рождествóмъ Христóвымъ!

*I congratulate you with the day of your birth, with the day of your angel (namesday, sc. of the saint after whom you were called, which seldom falls on the same day as the birthday), with the Birth of Christ! = I wish you many happy returns of the day, a merry Christmas!*

### Future

There is no *imperfective* future (with б́уду) from the verb хотѣть, and that from желáть is only rarely used.

Both verbs have, however, *perfective* forms, viz. захотѣть (= *suddenly to conceive a desire*) and пожелáть; the presents of these have future meaning, like those of all other *perfective* verbs, but they are not very commonly used.

### Past (Ipfv.)

Я хотѣлъ васъ спросить;—вамъ сказáть.

*I wanted (meant) to ask you;—to tell you.*

Я не то хотѣлъ сказáть. Я хотѣлъ пойтí тудá.

*I didn't mean that. I wanted (meant) to go there.*

Вы что хотѣли сказáть?

*What did you wish to say? or What did you mean?*

Я не хотѣлъ васъ безпоко́бить.

*I didn't want (mean) to disturb (trouble) you.*

“Сначала я молчалъ хотѣла.”  
*at first I wished to be silent. Pushkin. 20.*

Что она́ этимъ хотѣла сказать ?

*What did she mean by that ?*

Что вы хотѣли сегодня сдѣлать ?

*What did you wish (mean) to do to-day ?*

Мнѣ хотѣлось попросить васъ сказать мнѣ.

*I wanted to ask (beg) you to tell me.*

Мнѣ очень хотѣлось пить и ѣсть.

*I was very thirsty and hungry.*

Мнѣ не хотѣлось вставать.

*I did not want to get up.*

### Past (Pfv.)

‘Захотѣлось козлику въ лѣсъ погуляти.’

*The little goat took it into his head to go for a stroll in the forest (popular rhyme).*

Мы пожелали ему покойной ночи.

*We bade him good-night (of a quiet night).*

### Conditional (Ipfv.) ; cf. pp. 48, 49.

Я бы хотѣлъ посмотреть, что они тамъ дѣлаютъ.

*I should like to have a look (and see) what they are doing there.*

Вамъ бы хотѣлось поѣхать въ Сибирь, на Кавказъ ?

*Would you like to go to Siberia, to the Caucasus ?*

Мнѣ бы очень хотѣлось поѣхать по Волгѣ.

*I should very much like to travel on the Volga.*

Мнѣ хотѣлось бы это купить, еслибы у меня были деньги.

*I should like to buy that, if I had the money.*

Мнѣ бы хотѣлось поцѣловать васъ.

*I should like to kiss you.*

F 2

Наединѣ съ тобою, братъ, хотѣлъ бы я побить: *let*

## CHAPTER 21

MUST, NEED, OUGHT=НАДО, НУЖНО И ПР.<sup>1</sup>

There are various words to express these :

6.7	}	на́до	náda	✓	} = <i>it is necessary, one must</i>
		на́добно	nádabna		
		ну́жно	núzhna	✓	
0		нелъзя́	nyel'zyá (cf. p. 59)	✓	} = <i>it is impossible, one mustn't</i>
10	}	не на́до	nyenáda	✓	} = <i>it is unnecessary, don't</i>
		не ну́жно	nyenúzhna		
38	}	прихо́дится	prikhódyits(y)a		} = <i>one has to</i>
2.43		(cf. pp. 83, 290)			
	}	потре́бовать (infinitive)			} = <i>to require</i> = <i>I require</i>
		потре́бую (present)			
15.16	}	до́лженъ m.	dólzhen	} = <i>ought, must</i> (cf. F. R. B., p. 23).	
		до́лжна́ f.	dalzhná		
		до́лжно́ n.	dalzhnó		
		до́лжны́ pl.	dalzhný		
	}	обя́занъ m.	abyázan	} = <i>obliged</i>	
		обя́зана́ f.	abyázana		
		обя́заны́ pl.	abyázany		
		слѣ́дуетъ	slyé <sup>a</sup> duyet		= <i>it is correct, proper</i>
		прі́нято	prínyata		= <i>it is received, proper</i>

## Present

- 1 Кудá вамъ на́до ? Мнѣ никуда́ не на́до ; мнѣ на́до тудá.  
*Where do you want (to go) to ? Nowhere ; there.*
- 2 Мнѣ на́до (ну́жно) пойти́ тудá купи́ть что́-нибудь.  
*I must go there and buy something (cf. R.G., p. 70).*

<sup>1</sup> = и прѳчія, and others, &c.

- 3 Что вамъ надо (нужно)? Мнѣ ничего не надо.  
*What do you want? I need nothing.*
- 4 Вы что-нибудь потребуете?  
*Do you require anything?*
- 5 Мнѣ часто приходится бывать тамъ.  
*I often have to be there (cf. p. 292; it falls to my lot, it happens to me).*
- 6 Мнѣ надо деньги размѣнять. Не надо!  
*I have to change some money. No, don't!*
- 7 Мнѣ надо пойти выбриться и обстричься.  
*I must go and get a shave and have my hair cut.*
- 8 Вамъ нельзя туда входить, это запрещено.  
*You must not go in there, it is forbidden.*
- 9 Вамъ нельзя ѣхать, вы нездоровы.  
*You mustn't travel, you are unwell.*
- 10 Не надо разговаривать. Нельзя курить.  
*One mustn't talk. One mayn't smoke.*
- 11 Мнѣ надо (нужно) сей-часъ послать телеграмму.  
*I must immediately send a telegram.*
- 12 Мнѣ надо говорить по телефону.  
*I must speak on the telephone.*
- 13 Я долженъ написать письмо.  
*I ought to (have got to) write a letter.*
- 14 Что вы должны сегодня сдѣлать?  
*What have you got to do to-day?*
- 15 Она должна ѣхать завтра вечеромъ.  
*She has got to go off to-morrow evening.*
- 16 Когда вы должны ѣхать? Куда мы должны пойти?  
*When have you got to go? Where must we go to?*

- 17 Скóлько я вамъ дóлженъ? — — — должнá? —  
*How much do I (masc.) owe you? How much do I (fem.) owe you?*
- 18 Должно́ быть. Должно́ быть закры́то (за́перто).  
*It must be (sc. I expect). It must be (I expect it 's) shut.*
- 19 Я вамъ óчень обяза́нъ. Я обяза́нъ вамъ сказа́ть.  
*I am very much obliged to you. I am obliged to tell you.*
- 20 Вамъ слѣ́дуетъ тудá пойти́.  
*You ought to go there (sc. it is worth your while).*
- 21 Не при́нято (не слѣ́дуетъ) э́то говори́ть.  
*It is not correct (proper, the thing) to say that.*

### Future

- 22 Намъ скóро на́до бۇдетъ иди́ти (ѣ́хать).  
*We shall soon have to go (to start).*
- 23 Вамъ (не) ну́жно бۇдетъ, вы не должны́ бۇдете.  
*You will (won't) have to, will (won't) need to (or must (not)).*
- 24 Мнѣ (не) на́до бۇдетъ э́то сдѣ́лать. <sup>15</sup>Нельз́я бۇдетъ.  
*I shall (not) have to do this. It will be impossible.*
- 26 Вамъ приде́тся (cf. pp. 83, 290) въ Орлѣ́ пересáживаться.  
*You will have to change trains at Orel (nom. Орѣль, pron. Агу́л).*
- 27 Я бۇду обяза́нъ. <sup>18</sup>Намъ на́до бۇдетъ подۇмать.  
*I shall be obliged. We shall have to consider a little.*
- 29 Я дۇмаю, на́до бۇдетъ дать ему́ по-бóльше.  
*I think it will be necessary to give him a little more.*
- 30 На́до бۇдетъ мнѣ́ дать ему́ что́-нибудь ли́шнее?  
*Shall I have to give him anything extra?*
- 31 Какъ вы дۇмаете, приде́тся ли мнѣ́́ пойти́ тудá?  
*What (how) do you think, shall I have to go there? —*

## Past

- 32 Мнѣ надо (нужно) было послать за докторомъ.  
*I had to send for the doctor.*
- 33 Что мнѣ надо было сдѣлать? 34 Нельзя было.  
*What ought I to have done? It was impossible.*
- 35 Ему надо было сказать (объяснить) мнѣ.  
*He ought to have told (explained) to me.*
- 36 Вамъ не надо было сказать (дать) ему.  
*You ought not to have told (given) him.*
- 37 Не надо было дать ему столько от такъ много.  
*There was no need to give him so much (you should not have given).*
- 38 Пришлось (cf. pp. 83, 290) ему дать больше. 39 Надо было.  
*I had to give him more. It was necessary.*
- 40 Мнѣ разъ пришлось туда пойти.  
*It fell to my lot (I had to, happened to) go there once.*

## Past (specifically imperfective)

- 41 Вамъ когда-нибудь приходилось туда поѣхать?  
*Have you ever had to go (travel) there?*
- 42 Мнѣ никогда не приходилось.  
*I have never had to (it has never fallen to my lot).*
- 43 Мнѣ (часто) приходилось видѣть.  
*I have (often) happened to see, have seen (at some time).*

## Conditional

Such phrases as надо было, нужно было do not need the addition of the conditional particle бы when they are used

in the sense of *ought to have*. But it is added when they are used for *should have had to* :

- 44 Мнѣ бы надо было уѣхать раньше.  
*I should have had to depart sooner (earlier).*
- 45 Вамъ пришлось бы дорого заплатить за это.  
*You would have had to pay a great deal for that.*
- 46 Слѣдовало бы = слѣдуетъ = *one ought to, it is the proper thing.*

The particle бы added to these words without было makes the condition a future one ; such sentences are similar in meaning to those given under the heading Present (cf. also p. 49) :

- 47 Мнѣ бы надо вставать, одѣваться.  
*I really ought to get up, get dressed.*
- 48 Вы бы должны туда заглянуть.  
*You really ought to have a look in there (go and see).*
- 49 Вамъ бы надо купить что-нибудь на память.  
*You really ought to buy something for a souvenir.*

But in phrases such as *ought not to* бы is superfluous, не надо and не нужно being sufficient by themselves.

#### Cognate words

Нужда (*f.*) = *necessity* ; нужникъ (*m.*) = *W.C.* (N.B. this word is not used in conversation except amongst men ; a politer term is уборная (sc. комната) = *toilet*, or сортиръ (*m.*.)

Надобность (*f.*) = *necessity* ; нѣтъ надобности = *there is no need*.

Потрѣбность (*f.*) = *need* ; трѣбовать (трѣбую) = *to demand* ; трѣбованіе (*n.*) = *a demand* ; до вострѣбованія (till demand) = *Poste Restante, to be called for*.

Обязанность (*f.*) = *obligation*.



## CHAPTER 22

[TO GO (on foot): ИТТИ́ (ИДТИ́) ХОДИ́ТЬ

*Imperfective**Perfective**Infinitive*

ИТТИ́ (or ИДТИ́) ittyí

пойти́

paidyí

*Present*

(я) иду́

idú

пойду́

paidú

(ты) идёшь

idyósh

пойдёшь

paidyósh

(онъ) идётъ

idyót

пойдётъ

paidyót

(мы) идёмъ

idyóm

пойдёмъ

paidyóm

(вы) идёте

idyótye

пойдёте

paidyótye

(они́) идутъ

idút

пойдутъ

paidút

*Past*

(онъ) шёлъ

shol

пошёлъ

pashól

(она́) шла

shla

пошла́

pashlá

(они́) шли

shlyí

пошли́

pashlyí

*Imperative*

идите́

idyítYe

пойдите́

paidyítYe

The primary meaning of ИТТИ́ is *motion by one's own agency*; it may mean either *to go* or *to come*. The meaning of пойти́ is rather *to go anywhere in particular, to start*.

Both verbs are used of anything which moves along the ground or of itself, such as human beings, animals, engines, trains, motors, and also of machinery, clocks, watches, roads, &c., but especially of *motion on foot*.

They can *never* be used *specifically* of any form of riding, driving, or travelling, nor even of skating.

This is the theory, but in practice these verbs, especially пойти́, are nevertheless often used rather more loosely, when the actual means of locomotion, e.g. within the radius of one town, is unknown or may be uncertain. But they must not be used if driving or riding is *meant*.

“Весна идётъ” Гусев.

Besides those already given these verbs have a considerable number of secondary meanings. The numerous compounds, as well as the verbs for driving, &c., will be given later.

The verb *итти́* is, further, what is known as an *actual* or *concrete imperfective* verb (cf. p. 13); this means that it only describes an action which is in actual progress, *to be in motion, to be walking* in a definite direction.

The corresponding, so-called *potential, abstract* or *frequentative imperfective* verb (cf. p. 13) is *ходить*. All that has been said above applies also to this verb, but it only describes an action which is habitual or potential, or one which is going on for some time; it means *to be in the habit of going* or *to be walking about vaguely* or *aimlessly* (*to walk about for pleasure* is *гулять*, cf. p. 99).

From this verb, again, is derived a *perfective* verb, *сходить*, which means *to go and return within a short time*; these two verbs are conjugated thus:

### *Infinitive*

ходить	(k)hadyít'	сходить	skhadyít'
--------	------------	---------	-----------

### *Present*

(я) хожу́	(k)hazhú	схожу́	skhazhú
(онъ) хóдитъ	(k)hódyit	схóдитъ	skhódyit
(они́) хóдятъ	(k)hódyat	схóдятъ	skhódyat

### *Past*

(онъ) ходи́лъ	(k)hadyíl	сходи́лъ	skhadyíl
---------------	-----------	----------	----------

### *Imperative*

ходи́те	(k)hadyíte	сходи́те	skhadyíte
---------	------------	----------	-----------

In order to show more plainly the difference in meaning between these two verbs, *итти́* and *ходить*, examples of their use are grouped together under the various tenses.

## CHAPTER 23

## EXAMPLES OF THE USE OF THESE VERBS

## Present

иду́ (from итти́ ; primary and literal use)

Куда́ вы идёте ? Я идú домóй. Я идú гуля́ть.

*Whither (sc. where) are you going (sc. on foot) ? I am on my way home. I am going for a walk.*

Откуда́ вы идёте ? Мы идёмъ изъ цёркви.

*Whence are you coming ? We are coming from church.*

(Secondary, ' illogical ' use, cf. p. 57, Future, Pfv.)

Я идú за́втра въ теа́тръ.

*I am going to the theatre to-morrow (sc. I intend going).*

Онi идúть къ намъ сегóдня въ гóсти.

*They are coming to visit us to-day (sc. intend coming).*

(In both these instances the means of locomotion is not specified, and no stress is laid on it ; it suggests *motion on foot*, but does not preclude other means.)

Thus Я идú къ нимъ въ гóсти means *I am on my way to see them*, but with сегóдня added : *I am going to see them to-day* (lit. = *to them as or in amongst guests*).

(Other uses)

Этотъ по́ездъ идётъ óчень тiхо (бýстро).

*This train is going very slowly (quickly).*

По́зда на éтой дорóгѣ идúть мѣдленно.

*The trains on this line go slowly (sc. always).*

Пóездъ уже идётъ. Кто идётъ? Идётъ кто-нибудь?  
*The train is already in motion or is already in sight. Who goes there? Is any one coming?*

Пóездъ долго не идётъ (ог неидётъ). Кто-то идётъ.  
*The train is long in coming. Some one is coming.*

Вотъ наконецъ онъ идётъ. Идú, идú!  
*There it (or he) comes at last. I am coming.*

Я идú теперъ. Вы уже идёте?  
*I am going now. You are going already? Must you go?*

Дождь идётъ. Нётъ, не идётъ. Нётъ дождя.  
*It is raining. No, it isn't. It is not raining.*

Идётъ сильный снётъ. Врёмя идётъ. Никто не идётъ.  
*It is snowing hard. Time is going. No one is coming.*

Дёлло идётъ хорошó. Вáши часы идúть?  
*The business is going well. Is your watch going?*

Это плáтье (къ н)ей не идётъ;—óчень идётъ.  
*This dress does not suit her;—suits her very well.*

#### хожú (from ходítъ)

Вы хóдите въ теáтръ? (Вы идёте въ теáтръ?)  
*Do you go to the theatre? (Are you going to the theatre?)*

Я чáсто хожú въ теáтръ (Я идú въ теáтръ).  
*I often go to the theatre (I am on my way to the theatre).*

Онъ къ намъ хóдитъ óчень рётко.  
*He very seldom comes to (see) us.*

Онъ кáждый день хóдитъ въ кинематóграфъ.  
*He goes to the cinema every day.*

(In all these instances *motion on foot* is indicated, but other means are not precluded.)

"Въ кѣмъ жѣны по базáру ходятъ." VI Рус  
"Ходитъ мáятникъ, стучá;" XVIII A-To

GOING AND COMING

77

Я очень много хожу ; онъ совсѣмъ не ходитъ.

*I walk a great deal ; he doesn't walk at all.*

Больной уже ходитъ. Она ходитъ въ трауерѣ.

*The patient (masc.) is now able to walk. She is wearing mourning.*

Эти часы не ходятъ (;—не идуть).

*This clock does not go (;—is not going now).*

Этотъ поѣздъ не ходитъ больше.

*This train doesn't go (sc. has ceased running).*

Эта монета не ходитъ. Ходитъ слухъ.

*This coin is no longer in use. There is a rumour.*

**Future** (*Ipfv.* only from ходить)

Въ Парижѣ мы будемъ часто ходить въ театрѣ.

*In Paris we shall often go to the theatre.*

Вы будете ко мнѣ ходить ?

*Will you come and visit me (sc. see me often) ?*

Я туда не буду ходить больше.

*I shall never go there any more.*

Though in such cases other means than walking are not precluded, the distances are always assumed to be short.

**Future** (*Pfv.*)

пойду (from пойти)

Когда вы пойдёте ? Я пойду теперь (скоро, потомъ).

*When shall you go ? I shall go now (soon, later on).*

Куда вы пойдёте сперва ? Я сперва пойду въ аптеку.  
а потомъ къ доктору.

*Where shall you go first ? I shall first of all go to the chemist's,  
and then to the doctor.*

"А завтра кованой ногой, какъ змѣя стаица  
раздавятъ, и прочь пойдутъ —" Пушкин

Я сегóдня пойду́ къ нимъ съ визитомъ.

*I shall go and pay them a visit to-day.*

Ёсли вы пойдёте, я тóже пойду́.

*If you go, I shall go too.*

Какъ вы дýмаете, пойдётъ дождь сегóдня ?

*Do you think it will rain to-day ?*

Не пойдётъ. Пóбздъ сей-часъ пойдётъ.

*No, it won't. The train will start directly.*

Когдá парохóдь пойдётъ ? Сегóдня не пойдётъ.

*When will the steamer start ? It won't start to-day.*

Мы пойдёмъ гуля́ть пóслѣ зáвтрака.

*We shall go for a walk after lunch.*

Я пойду́ посмотрѣ́ть ; — спать ; — одѣ́ваться.

*I shall go and have a look ; — to bed ; — and get dressed.*

схожу́ (from сходитьъ)

Я схожу́ на пóчту ; — на ры́нокъ.

*I shall just run round to the post ; — to the market.*

Я схожу́ къ нему́ сегóдня на полчасá.

*I shall go and see him to-day for half an hour.*

Past (Ipfv.)

шѣль <sup>1</sup> (from итѣи)

Кудá вы шли сегóдня ўтромъ ? Я шѣль въ бáни.

*Where were you on your way to this morning ? To the baths.*

Откúда она́ шла, когдá вы её видѣли ?

*Where was she coming from when you saw her ?*

<sup>1</sup> The root of this word (шед-) is etymologically connected with that of ходить.

Я шёл очень медленно по набережной.

*I was walking very slowly along the quay.*

Мы шли к вам целый часъ.

*We were a whole hour in coming to you (on foot).*

Шли, шли. Мы долго шли. Она долго не шла.

*(We) went on and on. We walked for a long time. She was long in coming.*

Цѣлый день шёлъ дождь. Шёлъ снѣгъ.

*It rained the whole day long. It was snowing.*

Ночью шёлъ дождь. Шёлъ дождь ?

*It rained (or was raining) in the night. Has it been raining?*

ходилъ (from ходи́ть) (cf. p. 11)

Прежде мы часто туда ходили. Онъ ходилъ к нему.

*Formerly we often used to go there. He went to see him.*

Вы ходили туда когда-нибудь ? Ходилъ разъ.

*Have you ever gone there ? I went (or have been) once.*

Онъ к вам ходилъ ? Ходилъ. Не ходилъ.

*Has he ever been to see you ? He has been. He hasn't been.*

### Past (Pfv.)

пошёлъ (from пойти́)

Куда онъ пошёлъ ? Они давно уже пошли.

*Where has he gone to ? They have been gone a long time.*

Я вчера пошёлъ въ театръ. Пошёлъ дождь.

*I went to the theatre yesterday. It has started raining.*

Она ещё не пошла. Онъ пошёлъ къ ней въ гости.

*She hasn't started yet. He has gone to visit her.*

Они пошли гулять. Дѣти пошли спать.<sup>1</sup>

*They have gone for a walk. The children have gone to bed.*

<sup>1</sup> N.B. This does not mean : *have gone to sleep*, cf. p. 275.

Мальчики пошли купаться. Пошёл ругаться!  
*The boys have gone to bathe. He started to swear!*

сходилъ (from сходить)

Онъ сходилъ къ парикмахеру.  
*He has just gone round to the hairdresser's.*

Я сходилъ къ нимъ вчера чай пить.  
*I went round to have tea with them yesterday.*

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

идите (from итти)

Идите сюда! — туда! — скорѣе!  
*Come here! go there! come (or go) quickly!*

Не идите! Не идите сегодня!  
*Don't go now! Don't go to-day!*

ходите (from ходить)

Въ то мѣсто не ходите! Не ходите туда!  
*Don't ever go to that place! Don't go there!*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

пойдите (from итти)

Пойдите (or подите) сюда! Пойдѣмъ-те!  
*Come here [peremptory]! Let's go!*

Пойдѣмъ въ театръ (спать, купаться, гулять)!  
*Let's go to the theatre (to bed, to bathe, for a walk)!*

**(Past used as Imperative)**

Пошёлъ! Пошла собака!  
*Be gone! Get away dog!*



сходите (from сходитьъ)

Сходите за докторомъ, за виномъ, на рынокъ.

*Go and fetch the doctor, — buy some wine, — round to the market.*

**Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

ИТТИ

(commonest in negative, general, or doubtful expressions, or when *walking* (not *starting*) on a single occasion or in a definite direction is implied)

Порá итти. Ещѣ рано (теперь поздно) итти.

*It is time to go. It is yet too early (now too late) to go.*

Я не могу (не хочу) итти туда. Не надо итти.

*I cannot (don't want to) go there. Don't (you mustn't) go (now).*

Вы можете итти куда хотите. Лучше не итти (совсѣмъ).

*You may go where you like. Better not go (at all).*

Не стоить туда итти. Какъ мнѣ итти?

*It isn't worth while going there. Which is my way?*

Вы хотите итти? Невозможно итти!

*Do you want to go (se. away)? One can't get along!*

Туда нельзя итти, это слишкомъ далекó.

*You can't walk there, it's too far.*

Вы можете туда итти если хотите.

*You can walk there if you like.*

Туда итти очень долго и утомительно.

*It takes very long and is very tiring to walk there.*

Я хочу немножко итти. Итти намъ?

*I want to walk a little. Shall we walk?*

Здѣсь (туда) надо итти́.

*Here (to that place) one has to walk (sc. there is no other means of getting there or no thoroughfare).*

ХОДИТЬ

Я не могу́ ходить. Нельзя́ туда ходить.

*I can't walk. It is impossible to (you mustn't) go there (ever).*

Я люблю́ ходить въ театръ (на концерты).

*I like going to the theatre (to concerts).*

Я (не) люблю́ много ходить.

*I (don't) like walking a lot.*

**Infinitive** (*Pfv.*)

пойти́ (from итти́)

(Мнѣ) надо пойти́ теперъ домой. Я хочу́ пойти́ туда́.

*(I) must go home now. I want to go there.*

Можно пойти́ посмотре́ть? Лучше пойти́ завтра́.

*May (I) go and have a look? Better go to-morrow.*

Я (не) могу́ пойти́ туда́ сегодня́. Надо пойти́ туда́.

*I can(not) go there to-day. (I) must go there.*

Прежде чѣмъ пойти́. Какъ намъ пойти́ туда́?

*Before going. Which is our way there?*

Пойти́ намъ теперъ? Вы должны́ сей-часъ пойти́.

*Shall we go now? You must go at once.*

Пойти́ намъ сегодня́ въ оперу? Надо какъ-нибудь пойти́.

*Shall we go to the opera to-day? We must manage to go.*

If there is any doubt the adverb пѣшкѡмъ = *on foot* can be added :

Я хочу́ туда́ пойти́ пѣшкѡмъ.

*I want to go there on foot.*

Or even thus :

Тудá мѡжно (нáдо) пѣшкѡмъ.

*One can (must) go there on foot.*

сходѣть (from ходѣть)

Вы мѡжете сходѣть въ банкъ за деньгáми ?

*Can you run round to the bank for the money ?*

Example of use of both verbs

Я идú (or пойдú, or хочú пойтí) тудá, кудá царь пѣшкѡмъ ходитъ.

*I am going (or shall go or want to go) there where the tsar goes on foot.<sup>1</sup>*

## CHAPTER 24

TO COME (on foot): ПРИХОДѢТЬ, ПРИЙТÍ

In the case of numerous compound verbs formed from these two, иттí and ходѣть, the compounds of иттí are *perfective*, and those of ходѣть *imperfective* (cf. pp. 88, 246). The commonest is the verb which means specifically to come :

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	приходѣть	prikhadyít'	прийти (or придтí)	prityí
<i>Present</i>	(я) прихожú	prikhazhú	придú	pridú
	(онъ) приходитъ	prikhódyit	придётъ	pridyót ~ прий
	(онí) приходятъ	prikhódyat	придúтъ	pridút
<i>Past</i>	(онъ) приходѣлъ	prikhadyíl	пришёлъ	prishól
			-шла́, -шла́ ; -шли́	
<i>Imperative</i>	приходите	prikhadyít'ye	придите	pridyít'ye

<sup>1</sup> A euphemism for saying : *I am going to the W.C.*

G 2

do not confuse with *прийти*  
he will shil see p 238

What has been said of *итти* and *ходить* as regards their meaning only *motion on foot* applies also to this verb ; in using this verb *motion on foot only* is indicated, or else uncertainty as to the means of locomotion is implied, and long distances are precluded.

### Present

Онъ часто къ намъ прихóдитъ.

*He often comes to see us.*

Я прихожý сюда кáждый вéчерь.

*I come here every evening.*

Въ котóромъ часу прихóдитъ пóбъздъ изъ Рíги ?

*At what time does the train from Riga arrive ?*

Пóбъздъ прихóдитъ въ Москвú въ половíну девyятаго.

*The train gets into Moscow at half-past eight.*

### Future (Ipfv.)

Вы бýдете часто къ намъ прихóдитъ ?

*You will often come and see us ?*

Я бóльше не бýду прихóдитъ (ог не придý).

*I shall never come any more.*

### Future (Pfv.)

Я придý къ вамъ зáвтра вéчеромъ.

*I shall come and see you to-morrow evening.*

Онí скóро придýтъ. Онъ не придётъ.

*They will soon be here. He won't come.*

Когдá вы придёте къ намъ обéдать ?

*When will you come to dine with us ?*

Я бýду ждaть тутъ, покá вы не придёте.

*I shall wait here until you come.*

XXV \* Въ мíрѣ придётъ она въ силѣ и славу своѣю

**Past (Ipfv.)**

Онѣ прѣжде приходѣли чѣще.  
*Formerly they used to come oftener.*

Мнѣ въ гблову не приходѣло.  
*It never entered my head.*

(‘ illogical ’ use, cf. p. 11)

Вчерѣ ко мнѣ приходѣлъ мой знакомый В.  
*Yesterday my acquaintance V. came to see me.*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Пбѣздъ пришѣлъ. Пришѣлъ пбѣздъ ?  
*The train has arrived. Has the train come in ?*

Онѣ давнб ужѣ пришлѣ ? Онѣ пришлѣ.  
*Have they been here long (is it long since they came) ?  
 They are here.*

Когдѣ вы пришлѣ ? Отчегб вы не пришлѣ ?  
*When did you come ? Why didn't you come ?*

Зачѣмъ онѣ пришлѣ ? Я тблько что пришѣлъ.  
*What has she come for ? I have only just come.*

Передъ тѣмъ (пбслѣ тогб), какъ мы пришлѣ.  
*Before (after) we came, or had come.*

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Приходѣте къ намъ по-чѣще !  
*Come and see us as often as you can !*

Приходѣте обѣдать послѣзѣвтра.  
*Come and dine the day after to-morrow.*

Зѣвтра лѣчше не приходѣте.  
*Better not come to-morrow.*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Придите по-скорѣе !

*Come as quick as you can !***Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

Я люблю́ приходи́ть сюда́ вѣчеромъ.

*I like coming here in the evening.***Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Онъ (не) мо́жетъ (надѣется, обеща́етъ) прийт́и.

*He can(not) (he hopes, he promised) to come.*

Я хочу́ непремѣнно прийт́и къ вамъ за́втра.

*I want to come and see you to-morrow without fail.*

Прийт́и мнѣ сегóдня ? Когда́ мнѣ прийт́и ?

*Shall I come to-day ? When shall I come ?***Cognate expressions**

son XXV Не мечта́етъ э́тотъ свѣтлый приходъ  
 Приходъ (m.) = arrival, but N.B. also means a parish.

For the impersonal use of приходи́тся, придѣтся = one has to, cf. p. 68.

Another very common compound is the verb which means specifically to go away.

**CHAPTER 25****TO GO AWAY (on foot): УХОДИ́ТЬ, УЙТИ́***Imperfective**Perfective**Infinitive*

уходи́ть ukhadyit'

уйти́

uityí

*Present*

(я) ухожу́ ukhazhú

уйду́

uidú

&amp;c.

The same remarks apply to this verb as to приходи́ть, прийт́и.

**Present**

Вы ужé ухóдите ? Когда по́ездъ ухóдитъ ?  
*You are off already ? When does the train leave ?*

**Future (Pfv.)**

По́ездъ сейчáсь уйдётъ. Я уйдú тепёръ.  
*The train will be off directly. I shall go off now.*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Онí кудá-то ушли́. Какъ то́лько вы ушли́.  
*They have gone off somewhere. As soon as you went away  
 or had gone away.*

(Ipfv.)

**Imperative**

(Pfv.)

Не ухóдите !

Уйдúте отгúда !

*Don't go !**Go away from there !***Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Какъ намъ уйтí отсю́да ? Я не хочú уйтí.  
*How are we to get away from here ? I don't want to go away.*

**Cognate words**

N.B. Ухóдь (*m.*) has usually the meaning of *looking after somebody* (e.g. *an invalid*); *departure* (of a person on foot, of a train) is more often rendered by *отхóдь*; ухáживать за кѣмъ = *to tend anybody*, and also = *to flirt with anybody*.

Похóжь (*m.*, похóжа, *f.*, похóже, *n.*; похóжи, *pl.*) = *like*; она́ óчень похóжа на свою́ мать = *she is very like her mother* (*resembles*).

Похóдь (*m.*) = *a campaign*; похóдка (*f.*) = *gait*; похóдитъ на = *to resemble*.

## CHAPTER 26

## OTHER COMPOUNDS OF ХОДИТЬ AND ИТИ́

Other compounds and cognate words are :

- 1 Входить (*ipfv.*), войти́ (*pfv.*, past : вошёлъ) = *to enter* ; входъ (*m.*) = *entrance*, в. бесплатенъ = *entrance free* ; это не войдётъ туда́ = *that won't go in there (sc. is too big)* ; вхожу́ въ комнату́ = *I come into the room.*
- 2 Всходить (or восходить), взойти́ = *to rise (of the sun)* ; со́лнце взошло́ = *the sun has risen* ; восходъ со́лнца = *sunrise.* "Правá едва́ всходила́; X. A. Tolstoi.
- 3 Выходить, выйти́ (past : вышелъ) = *to go out* ; выходъ (*m.*) = *exit* ; выхожу́ изъ комнаты́ = *I go out of the room* ; что изъ этого́ выйдетъ (вышло́) ? = *what will come (came) of that, what will be (was) the result ?*
- 4 Доходить, дойти́ = *to reach* ; доходъ (*m.*) = *income* ; когда́ по́ездъ доходитъ (дойдётъ) до Москвы́ ? = *when does (will) the train reach Moscow ?* дѣло дошло́ до того́, что они́ поссорились = *things reached such a pitch, that they had a row* ; когда́ вы дойдёте до угла́, поверните направо́ = *when you get to the corner, turn to the right.*
- 5 Заходить, зайти́ = *to go behind, to set (of the sun), to call on* ; заходъ (or закаты́, *m.*) со́лнца = *sunset* ; со́лнце зашло́ = *the sun has set* ; я зашёлъ къ вамъ на мину́точку = *I have dropped in on you for a minute* ; зайдите́ къ намъ когда́-нибудь = *come and look us up some time.*
- 6 Находить, найти́ = *to find* ; + ся, + съ = *to be*, cf. pp. 288-292.
- 7 Исходить, изойти́ = *to go out (very seldom used).*
- 8 Обходить, обойти́ (past : обошёлъ) = *to go round* ; very frequently used reflexively = *to treat, or to dispense with* ; мы (вы) безъ этого́ обойдёмся (обойдётесь) = *we (you)*

Провожать тебя я выйду́ Jern. nil. Jern. outov.  
Выйду́, о выйду́ на звукъ призывной Пурганов. VIII  
 Птицъ вошёлъ, а вмигъ узнала. Э.О  
 Царь Небесный исходилъ владимиря Тунчев. II



will manage without that ; дѣло обошлось хорошо = the affair passed off all right ; онъ дурно обходится со мной = he treats me badly ; необходимо = indispensable.

<sup>9</sup> Отходить, отойти (отошёл) = to go away ; побѣздъ отходить (от уходить) отсюда въ пять часовъ = the train leaves here at five o'clock.

<sup>10</sup> Переходить, перейти = to cross over ; переходъ (m.) = passage, crossing ; перейдѣмъ на ту сторону = let us cross over (sc. on foot) to the other side.

<sup>11</sup> Подходить, подойти = to approach ; кто-то ко мнѣ подошёл = somebody came up to me.

<sup>12</sup> Проходить, пройти = to pass (by) ; время проходить = time passes ; они прошли мимо нашего дома = they passed our house (sc. on foot) ; used reflexively : я хочу немножко пройтись = I want to go for a little turn.

<sup>13</sup> Расходиться, разойтись = to part ; все гости разошлись = all the guests have departed (sc. in different directions) ; дороги здѣсь расходятся = the roads divide here ; расходы (m. pl.) = expenses.

<sup>14</sup> Сходить (N.V. ipfv.), сойти (pfv.) = to come down off ; съ ума сходить (сойти) = to go off one's head, go mad ; сумасшедшій (past participle active) = a madman ; used reflexively : мы съ нимъ сошлись = we became acquainted (lit. came together) ; я съ нимъ сошёлся = I got to know him. (This verb is not to be confused with сходить pfv., cf. p. 74).

Ты сойдѣшь ко мнѣ, душа! Тургенев. VI

Double compounds :

<sup>15</sup> Превосходить, превзойти = to excel ; превосходно = excellently, splendidly, A 1, top hole ; Превосходительство (n.) = Excellency, Высокопревосходительство = Noble Excellency.

1. Къ отбѣску, вздохнувь, подхожу я. XXIII A. Tolstoy.  
 2. Проходить изорванный жидъ XIV "  
 3. Зина не даромъ злится: прошла ея порѣ XV Тургенев  
 4. Ты сойдѣшь ко мнѣ, душа! VIII Тургенев

И пройдемъ  
последній  
страхъ.  
Тургенев  
VII

*т. е. гл. с. в. к.*  
 Происходить, произойти = *to proceed, arise from*; отъ чего́ это происходитъ? = *what does that come (sc. result) from?* что произошло? = *what has happened?* происхождѣніе (*n.*) = *origin*; это какого происхождѣнія? = *where does this come from?*

(For further derivatives from these verbs cf. *R. G.*, p. 227.)

## CHAPTER 27

TO GO (*ride, drive, travel*): ЪХАТЬ, ЪЗДИТЬ

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	ѡхать	yé <sup>a</sup> khat'	поѡхать	payé <sup>a</sup> khat'
<i>Present</i>				
(я) ѡду	yé <sup>a</sup> du	поѡду	payé <sup>a</sup> du	
(ты) ѡдѣшь	yé <sup>i</sup> dyesh	поѡдѣшь	payé <sup>i</sup> dyesh	
(онъ) ѡдетъ	yé <sup>i</sup> dyet	поѡдетъ	payé <sup>i</sup> dyet	
(мы) ѡдемъ	yé <sup>i</sup> dyem	поѡдемъ	payé <sup>i</sup> dyem	
(вы) ѡдете	yé <sup>i</sup> dyetye	поѡдете	payé <sup>i</sup> dyetye	
(онѣ) ѡдутъ	yé <sup>a</sup> dut	поѡдутъ	payé <sup>a</sup> dut	
<i>Past</i>				
(онъ) ѡхалъ	yé <sup>a</sup> khal	поѡхалъ	payé <sup>a</sup> khal	
<i>Imperative</i> ( <i>irregular</i> )	поѡзжайте payezháitye			

The primary meaning of ѡхать is *motion by agency other than one's own*; it may mean either *to go* or *to come*. The meaning of поѡхать is more especially *to go, to go off, to go away, to start*. Formula :

поѡхать : ѡхать :: пойти : идти

Both verbs are used of anything which moves along not of itself but is conveyed, especially of driving or travelling in any kind of conveyance such as train, carriage, or motor,

or of riding on any animal. They can *never* be used of walking, or of the things in which or on which people are conveyed, such as trains or horses. They are generally used of *coming* and *going* if the distance is considered great enough to preclude walking.

Further, the verb ѣхать is, like итти, an *actual* or *concrete imperfective verb*; this means that it only describes an action which is in actual progress, *being conveyed, actually to be travelling, riding, or driving*.

The corresponding, so-called *potential, abstract* or *frequentative imperfective verb* is ѣздить. Formula :

ѣздить : ѣхать :: ходить : итти

All that has been said above applies also to this verb (ѣздить), *but* it only describes an action which is habitual or potential, not one which is visibly proceeding; it means to be in the habit of *travelling, riding, or driving*.

From this verb, again, is derived a *perfective verb*, съѣздить, which means to *go and return within a short time, but not on foot*; formula :

съѣздить : ѣздить :: сходить : ходить

These two are conjugated thus :

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	ѣздить	yé'zdyit'	съѣздить	syé'zdyit'
<i>Present</i>				
(я) ѣзжу	yé'zzhu	съѣзжу	syé'zzhu	
(онъ) ѣздитъ	yé'zdyit	съѣздитъ	syé'zdyit	
(они) ѣздятъ	yé'zdyat	съѣздятъ	syé'zdyat	
<i>Past</i>				
(онъ) ѣздилъ	yé'zdyil	съѣздилъ	syé'zdyil	
<i>Imperative</i>				
ѣздите	yé'zdyitye	съѣздите	syé'zdyitye	

N.B. *To travel* (in general) = путешествовать (*ipfv.*).

## CHAPTER 28

## EXAMPLES OF THE USE OF THESE VERBS

Examples of the two verbs, ѣхать and ѣздить are grouped together under the various tenses more plainly to show the difference in meaning :

**Present** (cf. p. 75)

ѣду (from ѣхать ; primary and literal use)

Куда вы ѣдете ? Я ѣду въ Лондонъ.

*Where are you going to (sc. travelling, riding, or driving) ?  
To London.*

Откуда вы ѣдете ? Мы ѣдемъ съ вокзала.

*Where are you coming from ? We are on our way from the  
station.*

(Secondary, ' illogical ' use, cf. 75)

Вы ѣдете моремъ или сухимъ путёмъ ?

*Do you intend travelling by sea or by land (dry way) ?*

Я ѣду завтра въ городъ.

*I am going (travelling, riding, or driving) to town to-morrow  
(sc. I intend going).*

Онѣ ѣдутъ къ намъ сегодня въ гости.

*They are going to visit us to-day (sc. intend coming).*

In both these last instances the means of locomotion is not specified, but it is indicated that the distance is too great to walk.

Thus Я ѣду къ нимъ въ гости means *I am on my way to visit them*, but with сегодня added = *I am going to visit them to-day* (lit. = *to them as or in amongst guests*).

## (Other uses)

Мы ѣдемъ очень тихо (быстро, шибко).

*We are travelling (or riding or driving) very slowly (quickly).*

Теперь ѣдемъ тише (быстрѣе, шибче).

*Now we are going slower (quicker).*

Вотъ ѣдетъ трѳйка по большѳй дорѳгѳ.

*There is a 3-horse carriage (or sledge) going along the high-road.*

Онѳ уже ѣдутъ.

*They are already coming (sc. are audible or in sight).*

Онѳ долго не ѣдутъ. Вотъ наконецъ она ѣдетъ.

*They are long in coming. There she is coming at last.*

Мы теперь ѣдемъ. Вы уже ѣдете? ѣдутъ!

*We are going now. You are going already? There they are!*

Я ѣду за билѳтами. Мы ѣдемъ кататься.

*I am going for the tickets (sc. not on foot). We are going for a drive (lit. to roll ourselves).*

## ѣзжу (from ѣздить)

Вы ѣздите верхѳмъ?

*Do you ride on horseback? (cf. F. R. B., p. 180)*

Я часто ѣзжу за границу (Я ѣду за границу).

*I often go abroad (I am on my way abroad).*

Мы очень рѳдко ѣздимъ въ гѳродь.

*We very seldom go to town.*

Онѳ кѳждую зиму ѣздить въ Италію.

*They go to Italy every winter.*

**Future** (*1pfv.*; only from ѣздить)

Мы бѳдемъ часто къ вамъ ѣздить въ гѳсти.

*We shall often come and visit you.*

**Future (Pfv.)**

поѣду (from поѣхать)

Когда вы поѣдете? Я поѣду послѣзавтра.

*When shall you start? I shall start the day after to-morrow.*

Куда мы сегодня поѣдемъ? Скоро поѣдемъ.

*Where shall we go to-day (sc. ride or drive)? We shall soon start.*

Эту зиму (осень, весну) мы поѣдемъ въ Крымъ.

*This winter (autumn, spring) we shall go to the Crimea.*

Мы поѣдемъ сперва (or прежде всего) на Острова.

*We shall drive first to the Islands (at Petrograd).*

Я сегодня поѣду въ Царское Село (въ Котлинь).

*To-day I shall go Tsarskoye Selo (Kotlin, 'Kronstadt').*

Я поѣду туда по желѣзной дорогѣ (пароходомъ).

*I shall go there by rail (by steamer).*

Въ Россію въ этомъ году я не поѣду.

*I shall not go to Russia this year.*

Example showing uses of both verbs.

Мы сегодня вечеромъ собираемся въ театръ.

*We intend going to the theatre this evening (cf. p. 167).*

Вы пойдёте или поѣдете? = *shall you go on foot or drive?*

съѣзжу (from съѣздить)

Мы сегодня съѣздимъ къ знакомымъ.

*We shall drive to see some acquaintances to-day.*

Я съѣзжу на пристань справляться о пароходѣ.

*I shall drive to the landing-stage to ask about the steamer.*

**Past (Ipfv.)**

ѣхаль (from ѣхать)

Кудá вы ѣхали сегодня у́тромъ ?

*Where were you on your way to this morning (sc. not on foot) ?*

Мы ѣхали на вокзаль (на стáнцію).

*We were on our way to the station.*

Откуда онъ ѣхаль ? Онъ ѣхаль изъ за границы.

*Where was he coming from ? He was coming from abroad.*

Мы ѣхали туда цѣлыя сýтки.

*We were a whole 24 hours in getting there.*

ѣхали, ѣхали. Она́ до́лго не ѣхала.

*(We) went on and on. She was a long time in arriving.*

Мы ѣхали очень до́лго. Онъ ѣхаль въ автомобилѣ.

*We travelled a very long time. He was driving in a motor.*

ѣздить (from ѣздить) (cf. p. 11).

Прѣжде мы ѣздили кáждое лѣто за границу.

*Formerly we used to go abroad every summer.*

Вы ѣздили когда-нибúдь въ Амѣрику ? Когда-то ѣздить.

*Have you ever been to America ? I have, some time ago.*

Она́ (не) ѣздила къ нимъ.

*She went, did (not) go, has or had (not) been to (visit) them.*

Въ прѣшломъ годú мы ѣздили туда лѣтомъ.

*Last year we went there in the summer.***Past (Pfv.)**

поѣхаль (from поѣхать)

Кудá она́ поѣхала ? Они́ поѣхали въ Финля́ндію.

*Where has she gone to ? They have gone to Finland.*

Когда онъ поѣхалъ? Она поѣхала недáвно.

*When did he go? She hasn't been gone long.*

Онъ поѣхалъ верхómъ. Онѣ поѣхали катáться.

*He went on horseback. They have gone for a drive.*

Мáльчики поѣхали катáться верхómъ; — к. въ лóдке.

*The boys have gone for a ride on horseback;—for a row in the boat.*<sup>1</sup>

сѣѣздили (from сѣѣздить)

Мы вчера сѣѣздили къ Я́ковлевымъ.

*Yesterday we drove to see the Yákovlevs ('Jacobsons').*

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

поѣзжайте (from ѣхать)

Лúчше не поѣзжайте сегодня. Не поѣзжайте скóро.

*Better not go to-day. | Don't drive fast.*

Поѣзжайте прýмо (держите лѣвѣе, правѣе)!

*Drive straight on (keep more to the left, more to the right)!*

ѣздите (from ѣздить)

Не ѣздите такъ чáсто тудá.

*Don't go there so often.*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

поѣзжайте (from поѣхать)

Поѣзжайте лúчше парохóдомъ. Поѣзжай (*sing.*)!

*Better go by steamer. Start!*

Поѣзжайте скорѣе (напрáво, налѣво, обрáтно)!

*Drive as fast as you can*<sup>1</sup> (*to the right, to the left, go back*)!

<sup>1</sup> Or = Go, depart, start as soon as you can.



съѣзди (from съѣздить)

Съѣздите въ контору за билéтами.

*Go round to the office for the tickets (sc. not on foot).*

**Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

ѣхать

Порá ѣхать. Мѣжно ѣхать? Не náдо ѣхать.

*It is time to go. (We) can go now? Don't (you mustn't) go.*

Я боюсь ѣхать. Лúче не ѣхать. Нельзá ѣхать.

*I am afraid to go. Better not go. (You) can't go.*

Я не могу ѣхать (туда). Я не хочú ѣхать (туда). Náдо ѣхать.

*I can't go (there, sc. at all). I don't want to go (there, sc. at all). (We) ought to go.*

Теперь ѣхать пѣздно. Ещѣ рáно ѣхать.

*It is now too late to go. It is still too early to go.*

Вы ужé хотíte ѣхать? Лúче туда ѣхать.

*You wish to go already? Better drive there.*

Какъ намъ ѣхать?

*Which is our way (sc. driving or travelling)?*

(used as Imperative, cf. *R. G.*, p. 197).

ѣхать шагомъ!

*Drive at walking-speed (lit. by step)!*

ѣздить

Очень здорово верхѣмъ ѣздить (ог катáться).

*Riding on horseback is very healthy.*

Мнѣ приходится (cf. p. 68) чáсто туда ѣздить.

*I often have to go there (sc. travel)*

## Infinitive (Pfv.)

поѣхать

Въ бѣдущемъ году я хочѣ поѣхать въ Россію.

*Next year I want to go to Russia.*

Вы мѣжете поѣхать туда сегодня, если хотѣте.

*You may go there to-day, if you like.*

Я бы хотѣлъ поѣхать въ Америку.

*I should like to go to America.*

Мнѣ надо зѣвтра поѣхать за границу.

*I must start off abroad to-morrow.*

сѣѣздить

Мнѣ надо зѣвтра сѣѣздить въ гѣродь.

*I have to run up to town to-morrow.*

## General note

<i>I am going or coming</i>	}	= идѣ, ѣду
<i>I am on my way to or from</i>		
<i>I go or come (often or habitually or aimlessly)</i>	}	= хожѣ, ѣзжу
<i>I intend going or coming (frequently or habitually)</i>		
<i>I shall go (on a definite occasion or in a definite direction)</i>	}	= пойдѣ, поѣду
[ <i>I shall come, cf. pp. 84, 101.</i> ]		
<i>I shall go (and return quickly)</i>		= схожѣ, сѣѣзжу
<i>I was going or coming</i>	}	= шѣлъ, ѣхаль
<i>I was on my way to or from</i>		
<i>I went or came along (= was going or coming)</i>		

<i>I used to go or come</i>	} = ходи́ль, ѣзди́ль
<i>I have been (at some former time)</i>	
<i>I went or came (did not go or come)</i>	
<i>I went (and came back)</i>	
<i>I went or started off, have gone</i>	= поше́ль, поѣ́халь
[ <i>I came or arrived, cf. pp. 85, 102</i> ]	
<i>I went (and returned quickly)</i>	= сходи́ль, съѣ́здиль

*To walk is :*

ити́ (in general, or descriptive of actual process).

пойти́ пѣшкóмъ <sup>1</sup> (once).

ходи́ть (to be able to walk or walk habitually).

гуля́ть, гуля́ю (to walk for pleasure).

пройти́сь, прогуля́ться (to go for a little turn).

*To ride on horseback is :*

ѣзди́ть верхóмъ (in a general way, and to be able to ride or ride often).

поѣ́хать верхóмъ (once).

ката́ться верхóмъ (to ride for pleasure).

*To drive in a carriage or motor is :*

ѣзди́ть на лоша́дяхъ or въ автомоби́лѣ (in a general way, to do so habitually).

поѣ́хать на л. or въ а. (once).

ката́ться на л. or въ а. (for pleasure).

проката́ться . . . (to go for a short drive).

*To drive (= 'to direct') a carriage or motor is :*

прáвить лоша́дьми́ or автомоби́лемъ (cf. *R. G.*, p. 141).

<sup>1</sup> This is really pleonastic, as much as to say *to walk on foot*, but is nevertheless fairly often used.

**Cognate expressions** (cf. pp. 103, 104).

Въѣздъ (*m.*) = *entrance, drive, gateway.*

Выѣздъ (*m.*) = *departure.*

Переѣздъ (*m.*) = *passage across.*

Поѣздка (*f.*) = *a trip*, поѣздъ (*m.*) = *a train.*

Подъѣздъ (*m.*) = *front-door.*

Проѣздъ (*m.*) = *thoroughfare.*

Съѣздъ (*m.*) = *a large gathering, meeting.*

## CHAPTER 29

### TO ARRIVE: ПРИѢЗЖАТЬ, ПРИѢХАТЬ

Various compound verbs are formed from ѣхать, and these are all *perfective*; the corresponding *imperfective* verbs are formed from -ѣзжать (*not* from ѣздить). The commonest is the verb which means specifically *to arrive* (*come by carriage or train*):

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>				
	приѣзжать	priyezzhat'	приѣхать	riyé <sup>a</sup> khat'
<i>Present</i>				
(я)	приѣзжаю	riyezzhayu	приѣду	riyé <sup>a</sup> du
(онъ)	приѣзжаетъ	riyezzhayet	приѣдетъ	riyé <sup>i</sup> dyet
(они)	приѣзжаютъ	riyezzhayut	приѣдутъ	riyé <sup>a</sup> dut
<i>Past</i>				
(онъ)	приѣзжалъ	riyezzhal	приѣхалъ	riyé <sup>a</sup> khal
<i>Imperative</i>	—————			
( <i>irregular</i> )		приѣжайте	riyezzhatye	

Formulae :

приѣхать : поѣхать :: прийти : пойти

приѣзжать : приѣхать :: приходѣть : прийти

What has been said of ѣхать and ѣздить as regards their meaning only *travelling* or *being conveyed* applies also to this verb ; in using this verb *motion on foot* is precluded and long distances are implied.

### Present

Мы приѣзжаемъ сюда каждую зиму.

*We come here every winter.*

( ' illogical ' use, cf. *R. G.*, p. 179)

Я приѣзжаю въ среду въ десять часовъ утра.

*I am arriving on Wednesday at 10 a.m.*

### Future (Ipfv.)

Я буду приѣзжать въ Россію каждое лѣто.

*I shall come to Russia every summer.*

### Future (Pfv.)

Мы скоро приѣдемъ. Когда вы приѣдете ?

*We shall soon be there. When shall you come ?*

Мы туда приѣдемъ ровно въ часъ.

*We shall arrive there exactly at 1 o'clock.*

Сегодня погода плохая, врядъ ли приѣдутъ.

*To-day the weather is bad, I doubt whether they'll come.*

### Past (Ipfv.)

Прѣжде сюда приѣзжали многіе.

*Many people used to come here (to stay).*

(where the Pfv. would be expected)

Вчера ко мнѣ приѣзжалъ вашъ пріятель.

*Yesterday your friend came to see me (sc. for a while).*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Вотъ мы и приѣхали ! Вы давно приѣхали ?  
*Here we are at last ! Have you been here long ?*

Она́ ужé (ещё не) приѣхала ? Когда вы приѣхали ?  
*Has she (not yet) arrived already ? When did you arrive ?*

Мы приѣхали вчера́ вѣчеромъ въ девять часо́въ.  
*We arrived yesterday evening at nine o'clock.*

Послѣ́ тогó (пéредъ тѣмъ), какъ вы приѣхали.  
*After (before) you arrived.*

**Imperative**

Не приѣзжайте́ зимой ; приѣзжайте́ лѣтомъ.  
*Don't come in the winter ; come in the summer.*

Приѣзжайте́ какъ-нибудь въ Россію !  
*Come somehow to Russia (try and come if you can) !*

Приѣзжайте́ сегодня́ вѣчеромъ обѣдать.  
*Come and dine this evening (sc. not on foot).*

**Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

Я люблю́ приѣзжать́ сюда́ осенью́ (весной).  
*I like coming here in the autumn (in the spring).*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Въ́ это́мъ году́ я не могу́ къ вамъ приѣхать.  
*This year I can't come to (see) you.*

Вы можете́ приѣхать́ когда́ хотíte.  
*You may come when you like.*

Онѣ́ обѣщали́ скоро́ приѣхать.  
*They promised to come soon.*

Я надѣюсь приѣхать черезъ недѣлю.  
*I hope to (arrive) come in a week's time.*

**Cognate expressions**

Приѣздъ (*m.*)=*arrival*; это случилось до (послѣ) вашего приѣзда (or по вашемъ приѣздѣ)=*this happened before (after) your arrival (after y. a.)*.

**CHAPTER 30**

**TO DEPART: УЪЗЖАТЬ, УЪХАТЬ**

Another very common compound is the verb which means specifically *to depart (go away by carriage or train)* :

*Imperfective*

*Perfective*

*Infinitive*

уѣзжать	уеzzhá't'	уѣхать	уе <sup>a</sup> khat'
---------	-----------	--------	-----------------------

*Present*

уѣзжаю	уеzzháyu	уѣду	уе <sup>a</sup> du
--------	----------	------	--------------------

It is conjugated exactly like приѣзжать, приѣхать, and the same remarks apply to it.

**Present (' illogical ' use)**

Когда вы уѣзжаете? Я уѣзжаю завтра.  
*When are you leaving? I am leaving to-morrow.*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Мы теперь скоро уѣдемъ отсюда.  
*We shall soon be leaving here now.*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Онѣ ещё не уѣхали; она уѣхала давно.  
*They have not left yet; she has been gone a long time.*

Послѣ того (пéредь тѣмъ) какъ вы уѣхали.  
*After (before) you went off.*

### Imperative

Не уѣзжайте такъ скóро отъ насъ.  
*Don't leave us so soon.*

### Infinitive (Pfv.)

Мы рѣшили завтра уѣхать отсюда.  
*We have decided to leave here to-morrow.*

N.B. *Departure* is отъѣздъ or выѣздъ (*m.*); уѣздъ means an administrative district.

Это было до (послѣ) вашего отъѣзда (or по вашему отъѣздѣ)  
*That was before (after) your departure (after y. d.).*

Other compounds are formed with all the other prepositions, as in the case of итти and ходить, and their meanings are analogous. (For further derivatives from these verbs cf. *R. G.*, pp. 227-228.)

## CHAPTER 31

### TO CARRY: НЕСТИ́, (TO WEAR) НОСИ́ТЬ

There are several other verbs which resemble the groups итти and ходить, ѣхать and ѣздить in this respect, that each has two forms of the *imperfective* (cf. pp. 74, 91). Of these the following are important :

нести́ and носи́ть = *to carry*  
 везти́ and вози́ть = *to convey, to cart*  
 вести́ and води́ть = *to lead*

These are common in themselves and have many common verbs derived from them.

The primary meaning of нести́ is *to carry by hand*; it is

Reflexive. нестисъ (по-) *to drift*  
 Одна моя нестисъ по ясной лазури,



an *actual imperfective*, and its corresponding *potential or frequentative imperfective* is носить, the general meaning of which is *to wear*. These verbs are conjugated as follows :

*Infinitive*

нести́	nyestyí	носить	nasít'
--------	---------	--------	--------

*Present*

(я) несú	nyesú	ношú	nashú
(онъ) несётъ	nyesyót	носитъ	nósit
(они́) несúтъ	nyesút	носятъ	nósyat

*Past*

(онъ) нёсь	nyós	носилъ	nasíl
(она́) несла́	nyeslá	———а	———а
(они́) несли́	nyeslyí	———и	———yi

*Imperative*

неси́те	nyesitye	носи́те	nasítýe
---------	----------	---------	---------

Both these verbs have *perfectives*, понести́ (=to carry a short distance), поносить (=to wear for a short time), but neither of these is very commonly used. A few examples of both verbs follow :

**Present**

Несу́ вамъ письмо́. Что онъ несётъ ?

*I am bringing you a letter. What is he carrying ?*

Въ Россіи зимо́й но́сятъ шу́бы. Я не ношú кало́шъ.

*In Russia in winter they wear fur-coats. I don't wear galoshes.*

(This verb can also be used literally for *to carry frequently*.)

**Future** (*Ipfv.*, only from носить)

Лѣтомъ я бúду носить э́тотъ костю́мъ.

*In the summer I shall wear this suit.*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Да́йте, я понесу́ вашъ чемодáнь.

*Let me carry your trunk (or bag) for a bit.*

Я поношу́ = *I shall wear for a short time.*

**Past (Ipfv. ; pfv. seldom used)**

Я несъ тарéлки, она́ несла́ блюдо́, они́ ничегó не несли́.

*I was carrying the plates, she the dish, and they nothing.*

Она́ до́лго носила́ это́ пла́тье.

*She wore (or has worn) this dress a long time.*

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Не несите́ этого́ чемодáна, вамъ тяжелó.

*Don't carry this trunk, it's too heavy for you.*

Не носите́ этого́ пла́тья бо́льше.

*Don't wear this dress any more.*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Понесите́ это́тъ чемодáнь, пожа́луйста.

*Carry this trunk please.*

**Infinitive (Ipfv. ; pfv. seldom used)**

Тяжелó нести́ ! Я не могу́ этого́ нести́.

*It is heavy to carry ! I can't carry this.*

Вы мо́жете нести́ это́ ?

*Can you carry this ?*

Я не люблю́ носитьъ чёрное.

*I don't like wearing black.*

## CHAPTER 32

TO FETCH, TO BRING (*small things*)= ПРИНОСИТЬ,  
ПРИНЕСТИ

From these two verbs many others are formed, compounds of нести being *perfective*, compounds of носить *imperfective*. Among the commonest are :

*To bring (sc. by hand), to fetch*

*Imperfective*

*Perfective*

*Infinitive*

приносить    prinasit'    принести    prinyesti

*Present*

(я) приношу    prinashú    принесу    prinyesú

which is conjugated exactly like нести and носить.

**Present**

Приношу вамъ подаро́къ отъ ва́шего прі́яте́ля.

*I am bringing you a present from your friend.*

Э́то лѣ́ченіе прино́ситъ ей бо́льшую по́льзу.

*This treatment is bringing her great benefit.*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Дво́рникъ принесётъ вамъ ва́шъ па́спортъ.

*The concierge will bring you your passport.*

Я принесу́ вамъ всё́ что вамъ ну́жно.

*I will bring you all that you want.*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Что вы мнѣ́ принесли́ ? Я ниче́го не принёсъ.

*What have you brought me ? I have brought nothing.*

Пра́чка принесла́ вамъ ва́ше бѣ́лье.

*The laundrywoman has brought you your washing.*

Принёсся она́ сме́ртнаго́ смо́лу (resin) III Rushtkin

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Пожáлуйста, принесите мнѣ моѣ вещи.

*Please bring me (fetch me) my things.*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Принести́ вамъ что́-нибудь ? Прошу́ васъ принести́ мнѣ  
что́-нибудь поѣсть.

*Can I get you anything ? Please bring me something to eat.*

N.B. Приносить and принести can only be used of such things as can be carried by hand.

**Cognate words and common compound verbs**

- 1 Но́ша (*f.*)=*a load (that is being carried)*; носильщикъ (*m.*)=*a porter.*
- 2 Выноситьъ (*ipfv.*)=*to carry out of, to endure*; невыносимо=*unbearable.*
- 3 [Изнашиватьъ (*ipfv.*), изнаситьъ (*pfv.*)=*to wear out, cf. R. G., p. 227.*]
- 4 Относительно + *gen.*=*relatively, concerning*; отноше́ние (*n.*)=*relation (abstract).*
- 5 Переноситьъ (*ipfv.*), перенести́ (*pfv.*)=*to suffer, endure.* и аноситъ . переноситъ
- 6 Подно́сь (*m.*)=*a tray*; поно́сь (*n.*)=*diarrhoea.*  
Разно́счикъ (*m.*)=*a hawker (also spelt разнощи́къ).*
- 7 Снести́ (*pfv.*)=*to take, carry*; я ему́ снесу́ эту кни́гу=*I will take him this book*; вы имъ снесли́ что́-нибудь ?=*did you take them anything (sc. a small present)?* снесите́ ей цвѣто́въ и корóбку конфѣ́тъ (шокола́ду)=*take her some flowers and a box of sweets (chocolates)*; это́ на́до снести́ къ портно́му (сши́ть)=*this must be taken to the tailor (to sew up)*; это́ несно́чно=*that is intolerable.*
- 8 Уноситьъ (*ipfv.*), унести́ (*pfv.*)=*to carry off, away.*

Double compound :

- 9 Произноситьъ (*ipfv.*), произнести́ (*pfv.*)=*to pronounce, to utter*; произноше́ние (*n.*)=*pronunciation.*

Ты перенесѣшь меня вели, въ нашъ садъ... перенесѣшь X1  
и... мысли - одну за другою унесло. XX ATolsti

## CHAPTER 33

### TO CONVEY, TO CART: ВЕЗТІ, ВОЗІТЬ

The primary meaning of *везті* is *to cart* or *to convey*; it is an *actual imperfective*, and its corresponding *potential* or *frequentative imperfective* is *возіть*.

These verbs are conjugated thus :

#### Infinitive

везті	v(y)estyí	возіть	vazít'
-------	-----------	--------	--------

#### Present

(я) везу́	v(y)ezú	вожу́	vazhú
(онъ) везѣтъ	v(y)ezyót	вѣзѣтъ	vózit
(оні) везу́тъ	v(y)ezút	вѣзѣтъ	vózyat

#### Past

(онъ) вѣзъ	vyós	возілъ	vazíl
(она) везла́	v(y)ezlá	—а	—а
(оні) везли́	v(y)ezlyí	—и	—и

#### Imperative

везіте	v(y)ezítıye	возіте	vazítıye
--------	-------------	--------	----------

Both these verbs have *perfectives*, compounded with *по-*, but they are comparatively seldom used; *повезті* = *to give any one a lift*. *Возіться (ipfv.)* = *to have trouble or worry (with)*.

#### Present

Что вы везѣте ? Я везу́ дрова́. Ему́ везѣтъ (cf. lower).  
*What are you carting ? I am carting wood. He's lucky.*

Въ Россіи зимѣй вѣзѣтъ товаръ на саняхъ.  
*In Russia in winter they convey merchandise on sledges.*

#### Past (Ipfv.)

Мужікъ вѣзъ сѣно. Мнѣ не везло́ (impersonal).  
*A peasant was carting hay. I had no luck (idiom).*

## CHAPTER 34

*TO FETCH, TO BRING (large things): ПРИВОЗІТЬ, ПРИВЕЗТІ*

From these two verbs many others are formed, compounds of *везті* being *perfective*, and compounds of *возіть* *imperfective*. The commonest is :

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>				
	привозіть	privazit'	привезті	priv(y)estyí
<i>Present</i>				
	привожу́	privazhú	привезу́	priv(y)ezú

which is conjugated exactly like *везті* and *возіть*. Whereas *приносіть* and *принесті* can only be used of things which can be carried, food, utensils, clothes, parcels, &c., these verbs are always used of heavier things such as cannot be easily carried or lifted. Examples :

**Present**

Я привожу́ съ собой́ своего́ товарища М.  
*I am bringing my friend M. with me.*

Онъ привозитъ сюда́ всѣхъ своихъ друзей.  
*He brings all his friends here.*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Я привезу́ вамъ ковёръ оттуда́.  
*I will bring you a carpet from there.*

Когда́ вы привезёте её къ намъ ?  
*When will you bring her to (see) us ?*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Отчего вы не привезли его с собою ?

*Why didn't you bring him with you ?*

Вамъ привезли (if by cart, принесли if by hand) ваши вещи (покупки, книги, чемоданъ, багажъ).

*They have brought you your things (purchases, books, trunk, luggage).*

**Past (Ipfv.)**

This (привозилъ) is often used like приходилъ and приезжалъ, where one would expect the *pfv.*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Привезите вашего знакомого сюда завтра.

*Bring your acquaintance here to-morrow.*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Онъ хотѣлъ привезти его сюда обѣдать.

*He was going to bring him here to dine.*

**Cognate words and common compound verbs**

Возъ (*m.*) = a cart and the load on it, a cart-load.

Возня́ (*f.*) = fuss, trouble, worry, nuisance.

Ввозить (*ipfv.*), ввезти (*pfv.*) = to import, to cart in.

Ввозъ (*m.*) = importation.

Вывозить, вывезти = to export, to cart out.

Вывозъ (*m.*) = exportation.

Извозчикъ (*m.*) = a cab-driver and his cab, a sledge-driver and his sledge (also spelt извощикъ).

Навозъ (*m.*) = manure.

Перевозъ (*m.*) = a ferry.

Повозка (*f.*) = generic term for any kind of conveyance.

Свозить, свезти = to convey, to take.

Свезите меня туда = take me there (sc. drive me).

## CHAPTER 35

## TO LEAD: ВЕСТІ́, ВОДИ́ТЬ

The primary meaning of *vestí* is *to lead along, to conduct*; it is an *actual imperfective*, and its corresponding *potential* or *frequentative imperfective* is *води́ть*. These verbs are conjugated thus:

*Infinitive*

	весті́	v(y)estyí	води́ть	vadyít'
--	--------	-----------	---------	---------

*Present*

(я)	веду́	v(y)edú	вожу́	vazhú
(онъ)	ведётъ	v(y)edyót	водитъ	vódyit
(оні́)	веду́тъ	v(y)edút	водятъ	vódyat

*Past*

(онъ)	вёлъ	vyól	водилъ	vadyíl
(она́)	вела́	v(y)elá	———а	———а
(оні́)	вели́	v(y)elyí	———и	———lyi

*Imperative*

	веді́те	v(y)edyítYe	води́те	vadyítYe
--	---------	-------------	---------	----------

*Vestí* has a perfective *повесті́*, which means *to take along* (sc. *on foot*), *show the way*. *Воді́ться* (*ipfv.*) = *to exist in abundance, to abound, to thrive* (of animals or plants).

**Present**

Куда́ ведётъ эта́ доро́га? Эта́ у́лица ведётъ къ вокза́лу.  
Where does this road lead to? This street leads to the terminus.

Му́жикъ ведётъ ло́шадь (а ло́шадь везётъ возъ).  
A peasant is leading a horse (and the horse is pulling a cart).



Онъ вѣдитъ меня кажды́й день по го́роду.  
*He takes me about the town every day.*

### Future (Pfv.)

Я поведу́ васъ туда́ за́втра.  
*I will take you along there to-morrow.*

Онъ поведётъ васъ повсю́ду.  
*He will take you all over the place.*

### Past (Ipfv.)

Она́ велá хозяйство. Они́ тогда́ вели́ войну́.  
*She managed the household. They were then conducting a war.*

### Past (Pfv.)

Онъ повёлъ меня́ въ свою́ ко́мнату.  
*He took me into his room.*

*ed. by j. H. Kitting*  
*тогда́ и тогда́*  
*trage im Lande*

### Imperative (Pfv.)

Поведите́ меня́ въ бани́.  
*Show me the way to the baths.*

### Cognate words

Пово́дь (*m.*)=*a bridle; a reason, occasion, по поводу + gen. = on the occasion of, by reason of.*

The commonest compounds of вести́ and водить are :

Вводи́ть (*ipfv.*), ввести́ (*pfv.*)=*to introduce (a custom or commodity, not people, cf. p. 38); введение́ (n.) = preface, introduction.*

Доводи́ть (*ipfv.*), довести́ (*pfv.*)=*to lead up to, to argue, prove; доводъ (m.) = an argument, proof.*

Заводи́ть (*ipfv.*), заве́стй (*pfv.*)=*to start, establish, rear or breed, wind up a watch; заводъ (m.) = a factory; заведение́ (n.) = establishment.*

1809.1

I

А тѣ мужики въ гаремы вѣдѣтъ II Pushkin

- 4 Отводить, отвести=*to lead away, to assign, allot (a room).*
- 5 Переводить, перевести=*to translate*; переводъ (m.)=*a translation*, п. денегъ=*a money order.*
- 6 Приводить, привести=*to lead up to, to bring along*; привести въ порядокъ=*to put into good order.*
- 7 Проводить (N.B. *ipfv.*), провести (*pfv.*)=<sup>-веди</sup>*to lead through, past, to spend time*; гдѣ вы провели праздники, вакацію, каникулы (лѣто, осень, зиму, весну), *where did you spend the holidays (the summer, the autumn, the winter, the spring)?*
- 8 [Провожать (*ipfv.*), проводить (N.B. *pfv.*)=*to escort, accompany, see home, say good-bye at the station, see off*; 'Долгіе проводы — лишнія слёзы' (proverb)=*long farewells mean more tears.* Мы будемъ васъ провожать=*We are going to accompany you, see you off*; позволте васъ проводить? = *may I accompany you, see you home?*; Проводникъ (m.) *guide.*]
- 9 Разводить, развести=*to breed, rear*; used reflexively=*to divorce*; развѣдъ (m.)=*divorce.*
- 10 Сводить, свести=*to lead down, bring together*; сводъ (m.)=*an arch, vault.*

## Double compound :

- 11 Производить, произвести=*to produce*: какѣе впечатлѣніе это на васъ производить?=*what impression does that make on you?* это на меня произвело сильное, даже потрясающее, но вмѣстѣ съ тѣмъ очень пріятное впечатлѣніе=*that made a strong, even agitating, but at the same time agreeable impression on me*; производство (n.)=*manufacture*; произведение (n.)=*production, product, produce, literary or artistic work.*

## Treble compound :

- 12 Воспроизводить=*to reproduce.*

Провожать тебя я буду V. Lermontov.  
 { Где въ зарѣмкахъ наслаждаюсь,  
 дни провожу мусульманъ. III Pushkin

Ангарь, как грозной часовой  
стоит, одинъ во всей вселенной.

III Pushkin

115  
Тарёмы наши молчаливы  
непроницаемы стоятъ

IV Pushkin

Я стою въ твоей широкой

V Turgenyev

TO STAND: СТОЯТЬ, TO COST: СТОИТЬ

These two verbs are very similar and are therefore given here together in their *imperfective* forms (стоять = *to cost* has no *perfective*):

*Infinitive*

стоять	stayáit'	стоять	stóyit'
--------	----------	--------	---------

*Present*

(я) стою	stayú	[стою	stóyu]
----------	-------	-------	--------

(онъ) стоитъ	stayít	стоять	stóyit
--------------	--------	--------	--------

(онѣ) стоятъ	stayát	стоять	stóyat
--------------	--------	--------	--------

*Past*

(онъ) стоялъ	stayál	{ стояль	stóyil
--------------	--------	----------	--------

*Imperative*

стойте	stóitye	—	—
--------	---------	---	---

The *perfective* of стоять is постоять = *to stand for a short while, to wait*, or простоять = *to stand a certain time*; another is стать = *to take one's stand, se mettre* (cf. pp. 121, 124).

СТОЯТЬ = TO STAND

**Present**

Въ Россіи во время службы люди стоять.

*In Russia during the (church) service the people stand.*

Дѣвочка стоитъ у окна. Кто тамъ стоитъ?

*A little girl is standing by the window. Who is that standing there?*

**Future (Ipfv.)**

Я буду стоять здѣсь.

*I shall stand here.*

12

Смотри, какъ мистванъ молодиль  
стоятъ обьяны берёзы.

VI Turgenyev

**Future (Pfv.)**

Я постою ещё немножко.

*I shall stand (or wait standing) a little longer.*

**Past (Ipfv.)**

Мы стояли очень долго. Лошадь стояла.

*We stood for a very long time. The horse was standing still.*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Мы простояли там три часа.

*We stood there for three hours.*

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Не стойте! Стой, стойте!

*Don't stand! Stop, stand still!*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Постойте! Постойте здесь, пока я не придё.

*Wait, stop! wait a bit! Wait here, till I come (N.B. in Russian, literally, till I do not come).*

Постойте тут, пока я покупаю билеты.

*Wait here while I am buying the tickets.*

**Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

Нигдѣ стоять. Придѣтся намъ стоять.

*There is nowhere (no room) to stand. We shall have to stand.*

Нельзя (можно) тамъ стоять.

*You may not (may) stand there.*

Я не хочу (не могу) долго стоять.

*I don't want to (can't) stand for long.*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Можно постоять ещё немножко, если хотите.  
*(We) can stand (wait) a little longer, if you like.*

**Cognate expressions**

Состоять (*ipfv.*) = *to consist of* (въ чёмъ, изъ чего).

Изъ чего это состоитъ ?

*What is that made of (in the material, concrete sense) ?*

Разница состоитъ въ томъ, что . . .

*The difference consists in this that . . .*

Состояться (*pfv.*) = *to take place.*

Когда это состоится ? Это уже состоялось.

*When will that take place ? That has already taken place.*

Состояние (*n.*) = *condition, state, property (fortune, not land)*, cf. p. 57.

*Imperfective derivatives are formed from стоять as follows :*

Настаивать (*ipfv.*), настоять (*pfv.*) = *to insist* (на чёмъ = *on* . . .).

То wait. пр. подо-ждать

**CHAPTER 37**

**СТОИТЬ: TO COST**

**Present**

Сколько это стоитъ ? Это стоитъ очень дорого.

*How much does that cost ? That costs (or is worth) a great deal (dear).*

Это стоитъ рубль. Это ничего не стоитъ.

*That costs a rouble. That is worth nothing (is no good).*

Эта картина стоитъ тысячи. Это мнѣ ничего не стоитъ.

*This picture is worth thousands. This is no trouble to me.*

Не стоитъ. Сколько стоитъ туда поѣхать ?

*It isn't worth while. How much does it cost to drive (or travel) there ?*

(Не) сто́ить итти́ (ѣхать).

*It is(n't) worth while going.*

Э́то ни копѣйки не сто́ить.

*This is not worth a kopek.*

Сто́ить пойти́ туда́ ? По-мо́ему не сто́ить.

*Is it worth while going there ? In my opinion it isn't.*

‘ О́чень вамъ благодаренъ ! ’ ‘ Не сто́ить ! ’

*‘ I am very grateful (masc.) to you ! ’ ‘ Don't mention it ! ’*

Сто́ить вамъ то́лько сказа́ть сло́во.

*You have only to say the word.*

N.B. If it is divisible matter, or one of a large number, the price of which is being asked, the expression по чёмъ = at what (rate) ? is used (cf. *F. R. B.*, p. 199), e.g. :

Свѣ́жая икра́ по чёмъ фунтъ ?

*How much is fresh caviar the pound ?*

Э́та ма́терія по чёмъ аршинъ ?

*How much is this material the yard ?*

Э́ти апельси́ны по чёмъ ?

*How much are these oranges each ?*

For the answer either this verb or по . . . can be used :

Свѣ́жая икра́ сто́ить семь (рубле́й) пятьдеся́тъ (копѣекъ) фунтъ полфунта три (рубля́) се́мьдеся́тъ пять (копѣекъ), а па́юсная пять рубле́й фунтъ (по́лфунта два пятьдеся́тъ).

*Fresh caviar costs 7 (roubles) 50 (kopeks) a pound, (3 (roubles) 75 (kopeks) the ½ pound), and the preserved 5 (roubles) a pound (two fifty the ½ pound).<sup>1</sup>*

<sup>1</sup> These prices may not be actual.

Эта матерія стóитъ два рубля аршинъ.  
*This material costs two roubles the yard.*

Апельсины по десяти копѣекъ штúка.  
*The oranges are 10 kopeks each (lit. the unit).*

### Future

Скóлько это бúдетъ намъ стóить ?  
*How much will that cost us ?*

Это бúдетъ вамъ стóить óчень дóрого.  
*That will cost you a great deal (very dear).*

### Past

Это стóило ему óчень мнóго дéнегъ (хлопóтъ, *fem. gen. pl.*).  
*That cost him a great deal of money (worry).*

Стóило тóлько посмотрѣть, чтóбы понять.  
*One only had to look, in order to understand.*

### Conditional

Это стóило бы по крайней мѣрѣ тысяча рублей.  
*That would (or would have) cost at least a thousand roubles.*

[*The price is : цѣна (f. ; plur. цѣны) ; for the expressions for dear and cheap cf. F. R. B., pp. 24, 26.*]

### Cognate expressions

Imperfective compounds are formed from this verb thus :  
 Удóстóивать (*ipfv.*), удóстóить (*pfv.*) = *to honour, deign.*

## CHAPTER 38

TO BECOME, TO GET (intransitive): СТАНОВИТЬСЯ,  
СТАТЬ

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>
<i>Infinitive</i>			
	станови́ться <sup>1</sup>	stanavít's(y)a <sup>1</sup>	стать    stá't'
<i>Present</i>			
(я) становлю́сь	stanavlyús'	ста́ну	stánu
(онъ) станови́тся <sup>1</sup>	stanóvits(y)a <sup>1</sup>	ста́нетъ	stányet
(они́) станови́ются <sup>1</sup>	stanóvyats(y)a <sup>1</sup>	ста́нутъ	stánut
<i>Past</i>			
(онъ) станови́лся <sup>2</sup>	stanavíls(y)a <sup>2</sup>	ста́лъ	stal
(она́) станови́лась	stanavílas'	ста́ла	stála
(онó) станови́лось	stanavílas'	ста́ло	stála
<i>Imperative</i>			
	[станови́тесь	stanavít'yes']	ста́ньте    stá'n'tye

Some of the commonest of the many uses of this important verb are :

**Present**

Ставо́вится темно́, свѣтло́, холодно́, жа́рко, тепло́, холо-  
дно́е, тепло́е, лу́чше, ху́же, &c.

*It is becoming (getting, growing) dark, light, cold, hot, warm,  
colder, warmer, better, worse, &c.*

After this verb the predicate if in apposition to the subject of the sentence is often, though not necessarily, placed in the instrumental case (the predicative instrumental, cf. *F. R. B.*, p. 180, *R. G.* p. 141), which implies

<sup>1</sup> Colloquially pronounced : stanavítsa, cf. p. 290.

<sup>2</sup> Colloquially : -sa.



that the condition described is novel, transitory, or hypothetical :

Вопросъ становится важнымъ, интереснымъ.

*The question is becoming important, interesting.*

But if the predicate is an adverb or a comparative adjective (e.g. лучше) this is impossible, as these are indeclinable.

### Future (only *Pfv.*)

Черезъ часъ стáнеть совесѣмъ темнó (свѣтлó).

*In an hour's time it will become quite dark (light).*

Дѣти скóро стáнутъ больш́ими (взрóслыми).

*The children will soon be big (grown-up).*

Стáнеть трóдно, легкó (луккó), (не)возмóжно.

*It will become difficult, easy, (im)possible.*

Стáнеть врѣмя, когдá . . .

*A time will come, when . . .*

(as *perfective* of стоять, cf. p. 115).

Онъ стáнеть у подьѣзда (у крыльцá).

*He will stand (or draw up) by the front door (by the porch).*

This tense of стать is often used instead of б́уду to express the (compound) *imperfective* future from any *imperfective* verb, followed by an *imperfective* (never a *perfective*) infinitive :

‘ Стáну скáзывать я скáзки ’ (Леримонтов).

‘ I shall tell you tales ’ (sc. many and often).

It is most frequently thus used negatively and is if anything more emphatic than не б́уду :

Я не стáну объ ѣтомъ говор́ить.

*I am not going to talk about that.*

Стáну я тоской томиться, безутóшно ждáть;  
Стáну цѣлый день молиться, но кочáли гáдáть;  
Стáну думать, что скучаешь, ты въ чужомъ краю.  
Когдá я стáну умира́ть —  
А жить стáну тамъ, гдѣ ужъ Богъ велѣ́тъ.

It often acquires the meaning *to start, to begin*

Онъ стáнеть васъ спрашивать о насъ.

*He will start asking you questions about us.*

Что я тамъ стáну дѣлать ?

*Whatever shall I do (with myself) there ?*

### Past (Ipfv.)

Ея болѣзнь становилась серьёзной (опасной).

*Her illness was becoming serious (dangerous ; predicative instr.).*

### Past (Pfv.)

Стáло ясно, очевидно, вѣроятно, трудно.

*It became clear, evident, probable, difficult.*

Стáло (не)возмóжно ѣхать,

*It became (or has become) (im)possible to go (sc. travel, drive).*

Погода стáла хоро́шая, плохáя, лúче, хúже,

*The weather has become (got) fine, bad, better, worse,*

сырáя, сухáя, дождливая, тумáнная, пасмурная, переме́нчивая, ясная.

*damp, dry, rainy, misty (foggy), murky, changeable, clear.*

Она́ стáла (óчень) пóлная, худáя, блѣдная, сѣдáя.

*She has grown (very) fat, thin, pale, grey-haired.*

Онъ стáлъ (óчень) пóлный, худóй, блѣдный, сѣдóй.

*He has grown (very) fat, thin, pale, grey-haired.*

In certain cases the short form of the adjective is more commonly used :

Онъ стáлъ (она́ стáла) óчень слабъ (слабá).

*He (she) has grown very weak.*

In all such cases special verbs can be and often are used.

И лишь румяный стала XV. Гундер.  
 Мой одръ... сталъ носить весь мой миръ  
 { Теперь же много стали понятии XIX. Зичков.  
 обманъ и коварство и зло. XX. АТолстои

instead ; this is most frequently done in addressing anybody, because such phrases (in the plural) as :

Вы ста́ли по́лные = *you have grown stout*, are avoided.

Hence it is more usual to say :

Вы пополни́ли, похуди́ли, поблѣдни́ли, посѣди́ли.

*You have grown stout, thin, pale, grey-haired.*

Онъ осла́бъ, окрѣпъ, постарѣлъ, помолоди́лъ.

*He has grown weak, strong, has aged, has become rejuvenated.*

(from осла́бнуть, окрѣпнуть, cf. p. 47).

Она осла́бла, окрѣпла, постарѣла, помолоди́ла, похорошѣла, подурни́ла, пополни́ла, похуди́ла, &c.

*She has grown weak, strong, has aged, become rejuvenated, grown pretty, ugly, stout, thin, &c.*

Мнѣ ста́ло нелѣзко, вѣсело, гру́стно, скучно.

*I became (got, grew) embarrassed, jolly, sad, bored.*

Мнѣ ста́ло холодно, тепло́, жа́рко.

*I became (got) cold, warm, hot.*

Ему́ (ей) ста́ло пло́хо, хорош́о, лу́чше, ху́же.

*He (she) has got bad, well, better, worse.*

Ста́ло-быть. Во что́ бы то ни ста́ло.

*Presumably, consequently, and so . . . Come what may, at any cost.* (Both these idioms are very common.)

In some of the above instances the predicate may be put in the instrumental case, but as its use depends on the individual word and the individual instance the student is advised to keep on the safe side and use the nominative (except where examples of the instrumental are given), which is never wrong.

(as *perfective* of стоять, cf. p. 115)

Онъ сталь у ворóть. Она́ ста́ла во́злѣ меня́.

*He took up his stand (or drew up) by the gate. She came and stood by me.*

Мой часы́ ста́ли. Рабо́та ста́ла.

*My watch has stopped. The work has come to a stop.*

This tense of стать often has the meaning of *started* and is often used as the equivalent of нача́ль = *began* (cf. p. 261), and is indeed much commoner ; it is always followed by an *imperfective* infinitive and cannot stand alone in this sense :

Онъ сталь меня́ разспра́шивать. Она́ ста́ла пла́кать.

*He began to cross-question me. She began to weep.*

Го́сти ста́ли уѣзжа́ть. Онъ сталь ко мнѣ приходи́ть.

*The guests began to depart. He began (or has begun) to come to see me.*

Э́то ста́ло мнѣ надо́ждать.

*This began to be irksome to me (sc. I began to have enough of it).*

Онъ сталь кури́ть, пить, игра́ть въ ка́рты.

*He has taken to smoking, drinking, playing at cards (or took to or has begun to or began to).*

Another, at first puzzling, use of this tense is that of the neuter singular of it, negatived and followed by the genitive, with meaning *has come to an end, ceased to be, there is no more of* :

Не ста́ло у меня́ де́негъ.

*I came (or have come) to the end of my money.*

‘ Не ста́ло у ба́бушки сѣ́раго ко́злика.’

‘ *The old woman’s grey goat died* ’ (popular rhyme).

Не стало этого блюда.

*There is no more of this dish.*

**Imperative** (as *Pfv.* of стоять, cf. p. 115)

Станьте у двери (у дверей).

*Stand (sc. go and stand) by the door (doors, sc. folding).*

### Infinitive

(The *imperfective* infinitive is seldom used, and the *perfective* almost exclusively as *pfv.* of стоять, cf. p. 115).

Стать на колѣни (*nom. and acc. pl.*).

*To kneel down.*

The verbs дѣлаться (*ipfv.*), сдѣлаться (*pfv.*) = *to make oneself* (cf. p. 253) are very often used as alternatives for становиться and стать with the meaning *to become, to grow, to get*, in such phrases as :

Дѣлается темно, &c. ; сдѣлается возможно (от -нымъ) ;  
*It is growing dark ; it will become possible ;*

сдѣлалось ясно ; онъ сдѣлался богатымъ человекомъ.  
*it became clear ; he has become a rich man.*

It is especially common in certain phrases, e.g. :

Что съ вами сдѣлалось ? Со мной сдѣлалось дурно.

*What is the matter with you ? I feel bad (with me it has become bad).*

From both становиться and стать are, further, derived a whole series of important verbs with more or less cognate meanings ; from становиться the most useful derivative is the verb which means specifically *to stop*, see chap. 39.

### Cognate expressions

Постановлять (*ipfv.*), постановить (*pfv.*) = *to decide, decree* ;  
постановление (*n.*) = *a decision, decree.*

## CHAPTER 39

TO STOP, TO HALT, TO PUT UP: ОСТАНАВЛИВАТЬСЯ,  
ОСТАНОВИТЬСЯ

	<i>Imperfective</i>	<i>Perfective</i>
<i>Infinitive</i>	останáвливатьсá <sup>1</sup> astanávlyivat's(y)a <sup>1</sup>	останови́тьсá <sup>1</sup> astanavít's(y)a <sup>1</sup>
<i>Present</i>	(я) останáвливаюсь astanávlyivayus' (онъ) останáвливаетсá <sup>1</sup> astanávlyivayets(y)a <sup>1</sup>	остановлю́сь astanavlyús' останови́тсá <sup>1</sup> astanóvits(y)a <sup>1</sup>
<i>Past</i>	(онъ) останáвливалсá <sup>2</sup> astanávlyivals(y)a <sup>2</sup>	останови́лсá <sup>2</sup> astanavíls(y)a <sup>2</sup>
<i>Imperative</i>	останáвливайтесь astanávlyivaityes'	останови́тесъ astanavítYES'

This verb is derived from станови́тьсá ; the *perfective*, immediately formed from it, is similarly conjugated, the *imperfective* like думáть (cf. p. 22). Without the reflexive pronoun the verb becomes transitive. Стáть can be used alternatively for the *perfective* when it means *to stop still*.

## Present

Этотъ по́ездъ останáвливаетсá на кáждой стáнции.  
*This train stops at every station.*

Гдѣ вы останáвливаетесъ въ Москвѣ ?  
*Where do you stay in Moscow ?*

<sup>1</sup> Colloquially pronounced : -tsa.

<sup>2</sup> Colloquially : -sa.

**Future (Ipfv.)**

Мы будемъ останáвливаться у нашихъ друзéй.

*We shall stay (sc. often or indefinitely) at our friends'.*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Пóездъ сей-часъ останóвится ;—здéсь (не) останóвится.

*The train will stop directly ;—will (won't) stop here.*

Ждите пока не останóвится (or стáнетъ, cf. p. 121)  
пóездъ.

*Wait until the train stops (lit. does not stop).*

Ско́лько мину́тъ пóездъ здéсь останóвится ?

*How many minutes will the train stop here ?*

Я останóвлюсь здéсь ; гдé вы останóвитесь ?

*I shall put up here ; where shall you stay ?*

Мы останóвимся въ гостíницé ; онí останóвятся у насъ.

*We shall stay in a hotel ; they will stay with us.*

Я его́ останóвлю.

*I shall stop him.*

**Past (Ipfv.)**

Мы (никогда́ не) останáвливались въ гостíницé.

*We (never) used to stay at the hotel (or never stayed).*

Я ни́гдé (никогда́) не останáвливался (тамъ).

*I stayed (stopped) nowhere (have never stayed (stopped) there).*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Она́ останóвилась у своéихъ роднóихъ.

*She has put up (is stopping) at her relations'.*

Я останóвился у своéго (or моего́) другá.

*I have put up at (am stopping at) my friend's.*

Пóвздъ (ещё не) остано́вился (ог сталь, cf. p. 124).  
*The train has (not yet) stopped.*

Онѝ вдругъ остано́вились въ серединѣ́ у́лицы.  
*They suddenly stopped in the middle of the street.*

Онъ остано́вилъ экипа́жъ у на́шего подьѣзда.  
*He stopped the carriage at our front door.*

#### Imperative (Ipfv.)

Не остано́вливайтесь (тамъ) !  
*Don't stop (or stay) (there) !*

#### Imperative (Pfv.)

Остано́витесь ! Остано́вимся въ э́той гости́ницѣ́ (здѣсь).  
*Halt ! Stop ! Let us stop at this hotel (here).*

#### Infinitive (Ipfv.)

Я не люблю́ остано́вливаться въ пансіо́нахъ.  
*I don't like staying in boarding-houses.*

#### Infinitive (Pfv.)

Гдѣ́ вы со́вѣтуе́те мнѣ́ остано́виться ?  
*Where do you advise me to stay ?*

Прошу́ васъ остано́виться на мину́точку у э́того магази́на.  
*Please stop still for a minute at this shop.*

Прошу́ васъ остано́вить лошаде́й (автомобі́ль).  
*Please stop the horses (the car).*

Будьте́ добры́ остано́виться на углу́ э́той у́лицы.  
*Be so good as to stop at the corner of this street.*

#### Cognate expressions

Остано́вка (*f.*) = a halt ; пѣрвая (слѣ́дующая) остано́вка бу́детъ  
 въ — = *the first (next) stop will be at —* ; гдѣ́ бу́детъ п. (с.) о. ?



= *where will the first (next) stop be?* сколько здѣсь останóвки (gen.)? = *how long do we stop here?*

Приостанáвливатьcя (*ipfv.*), приостанови́тьcя (*pfv.*) = *to come to a standstill, to a halt.*

From *стать* are derived a number of extremely common and useful compounds, all of them *perfective*. The corresponding *imperfective* verbs are formed by means of the same prepositions from an infinitive -*ставáть* (present -*стаю́*) which is seldom used in its simple form.

One of the commonest of these is the reflexive verb which means specifically *to stay*.

## CHAPTER 40

TO STAY, TO REMAIN : ОСТАВА́ТЬСЯ, ОСТА́ТЬСЯ

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	остава́ться <sup>1</sup>	astaváit's(y)a <sup>1</sup>	оста́ться <sup>1</sup>	astáit's(y)a <sup>1</sup>
<i>Present</i>	(я) остаю́сь	astayus'	оста́нусь	astánus'
(онъ) остаётся <sup>2</sup>	astayóts(y)a <sup>2</sup>	оста́нется <sup>2</sup>	astányets(y)a <sup>2</sup>	
(они́) остаются <sup>2</sup>	astayúts(y)a <sup>2</sup>	оста́нутся <sup>2</sup>	astánuts(y)a <sup>2</sup>	
<i>Past</i>	(онъ) оставáлся <sup>3</sup>	astaváls(y)a <sup>3</sup>	оста́лся	astáls(y)a <sup>3</sup>
(они́) оставáлись	astavályis'	оста́лись	astályis'	
<i>Imperative</i>	остава́йтесь	astaváityes'	оста́ньтесь	astá'n'tyes'

irregular (cf. p. 39)

In contrast to *останáвливатьcя*, *останови́тьcя*, this verb means *to stay a considerable time, to remain, to stop behind* (NOT *to halt, stop still, or put up at*)

<sup>1</sup> Colloquially pronounced : astaváit'sa, astáit'sa.

<sup>2</sup> Colloquially : tsa.

<sup>3</sup> Colloquially : sa.

**Present**

‘Я остаюсь преданный вамъ ;—глубокó уважающій васъ.’

‘*I remain very truly yours ;—very sincerely yours.*’

(Literally : ‘devoted to you ;—deeply respecting you.’)

По вечерамъ мы рѣдко остаёмся дома.

*In the evenings we seldom stay at home.*

Я пока остаюсь здѣсь. Вы остаётесь дома сегодня ?

*For the present I am stopping here. Are you staying at home to-day ?*

Я остаюсь здѣсь до пятницы (на той недѣлѣ).

*I am staying here till Friday (next week).*

**Future (Pfv. ; the Ipfv. Future is not used)**

Я останусь здѣсь мѣсяцъ. Вы здѣсь останетесь ?

*I shall remain here a month. Shall you remain here ?*

Мы останемся ещё немножо. Ничего не останется.

*We shall remain a little longer. There will be nothing left.*

Какъ долго (ог сколько времени) вы тамъ останетесь ?

*How long shall you remain there ?*

Вы тамъ долго останетесь ? Я не долго останусь.

*Shall you stop there long ? I shan't stop long.*

Билеты за вами останутся ? Это за кѣмъ останется ?

*Shall you keep (retain) the tickets ? Who will keep that ?*

Я увѣренъ, что вы останетесь очень довольны этимъ.

*I am sure you will be very pleased with this (will like, enjoy it very much).*

**Past (Ipfv.)**

Мы часто оставались у нихъ на-ночь.

*We often used to stay with them for the night.*

Я никогда тамъ долго не оставался.<sup>1</sup>

*I never used to stop there any length of time (or never stopped).*

Ничего не оставалось дѣлать.

*There was nothing left to do.*

### Past (Pfv.)

Вы тамъ долго остались? Я остался у нихъ обѣдать.

*Did you remain there long? I stayed to dinner with them.*

Сколько времени (какъ долго) вы тамъ остались?

*How long did you remain there?*

Я тамъ остался не долго, всего три дня.

*I didn't stay there long, only three days altogether.*

Ничего не осталось; что о.?; что-нибудь о.?

*There's nothing left; what is left?; is anything left?*

У меня ни одной копейки не осталось.

*I haven't a single kopek left.*

Деньги за кѣмъ остались? за мной, за нимъ.

*Who kept the money? I did, he did.*

Вы остались довольны (я остался доволенъ, она осталась довольна) этимъ?

*Did you like, enjoy, were you pleased with (I liked, she liked, &c.) this?*

### Imperative (Ipfv.)

Не оставайтесь тамъ долго!

*Don't stop there long!*

### Imperative (Pfv.)

Останьтесь со мной (съ нами) ещё немножко.

*Stay with me (with us) a little longer.*

<sup>1</sup> It is more usual to say останавливался, cf. p. 127.

Оста́немся здѣсь ещё нѣсколько дней.

*Let us stay here a few days longer.*

**Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

Не на́до (вамъ) остава́ться тамъ до́лго.

*(You) mustn't stay there long.*

Я не могу́ (не хочú, не сто́ить) тамъ до́лго остава́ться.

*I can't (don't want to, it isn't worth while to) stop there long*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Я не могу́ (не хочú) сего́дня до́льше оста́ться.

*I can't (don't want to) stop longer to-day.*

На́до (мо́жно) оста́ться здѣсь на́-ночь.

*(We) must (can) stop here for the night.*

Мнѣ бы хотѣлось оста́ться до за́втра.<sup>1</sup>

*I should like to stay till to-morrow.*

Мнѣ пришло́сь (cf. p. 71) оста́ться тамъ це́лую неде́лю.

*I had to stop there a whole week.*

Не хоте́те ли вы оста́ться у насъ обѣ́дать ?

*Won't you stop and have dinner with us ?*

Оста́ться намъ ещё денё́къ, дня два ?

*Shall we stay another day (dimin.), two days or so ?*

**Cognate expressions**

Оста́токъ (*m., pl.* : оста́тки) = *the remainder, remains* ; оста́льно́й = *the remaining*.

<sup>1</sup> Strictly should be : до за́втрашняго (sc. дня).

## CHAPTER 41

## OTHER COMPOUNDS OF -СТАВА́ТЬ AND -СТАТЬ

The other compounds of -стать and -ставать are almost equally common and useful, and as they help to illustrate the uses of the prepositions in compound verbs, several are given here as examples. In these verbs the prepositions have not always the same meanings as in the case of the compounds of идти́, ходи́ть, cf. p. 88; there they retained largely their primary, literal signification, here the meaning is rather secondary and not so obvious (cf. pp. 325, 326):

Встава́ть (*ipfv.*), вста́ть (*pfv.*) = *to get up (from bed).*

Я встаю́ очень поздно́. Когда́ вы встаёте ?

*I get up very late. When do you get up ?*

Я скоро́ вста́ну. Она́ ещё не вста́нется.

*I shall soon get up. She won't get up yet.*

Онѝ уже́ вста́ли. Онѝ вста́ль (она́ вста́ла) давно́.

*They are up already. He (she) got up long ago.*

Не встава́йте ! Встава́йте ! (Вста́ньте !)

*Don't get up, don't rise ! Get up ! (Stand up !)*

Пора́ встава́ть !

*It is time to get up !*

Возстава́ть, возста́ть = *to rebel*, возста́ние (*n.*) = *rebellion.*

Достава́ть, доста́ть = *to get, procure, fetch, obtain.*

Я э́то вамъ доста́ну. Отку́да вы доста́нете э́то ?

*I will get this for you. Where will you get this from ?*

Отку́да вы э́то доста́ли ? Я доста́ль вамъ кни́гу.

*Where did you get this from ? I have procured you the book.*

Пожáлуйста, достáньте мнѣ мáрокъ.

*Please, fetch (get) me some stamps (gen. plur.).*

Гдѣ (откуда) я могу достáть такúю вещь ?

*Where can I get a thing like that (from) ?*

Я нигдѣ (от ни откуда) не могу это (от этого) достáть.

*I can't get this (from) anywhere.*

Used impersonally this verb means *to suffice, to reach* :

Этого вамъ достáнетъ ? Дѣнегъ не достáнетъ.

*Will that be enough for you ? There won't be enough (of) money.*

Достáнетъ ! Намъ не достáло хлѣба.

*That will do ! We haven't enough bread.*

Мнѣ васъ недостаётъ. Чегó вамъ недостаётъ ?

*I miss you (feel the want of). What do you lack ?*

Этого тóлько и не доставáло !

*That is the last straw (only that was wanting) !*

Емú за это достáнется !

*He'll catch it for that !*

Достáточно ! (Довóльно ! Пóлно ! Хвáтитъ ! Бúдетъ !

*Enough !* are all synonyms of достáточно).

Заставáть, застáть = *to find at home*.

Я ихъ никогдá не застаю (дóма).

*I never find them in (at home).*

Вы ихъ (не) застáнете (у нихъ).

*You will (not) find them (at their house).*

Вы ихъ застáли ? Я его застáлъ въ постѣли

*Did you find them in ? I found him in bed.*

~~от~~ Отица и матъ моего едва ли  
Застáнемъ ты въ живыхъ...

Наставать, настать = *to approach, draw near.*

Насталъ часъ ; настаётъ конѣцъ.

*The hour has come ; the end is near.*

Настала порá, весна, осень, зима.

*The time, the spring, the autumn, the winter has come.*

A synonym of this verb is : наступать (*ipfv.*), наступить (*pfv.*), cf. p. 329.

Отставать, отстать = *to remain behind, desist.*

Отстаньте ! = *stop it !*

*На свѣтѣ мало, говорятъ  
Мнѣ остаётся жить !*

Переставать, перестать = *to cease.*

*III. Lemmas.*

Снѣгъ перестаетъ. Она не перестаетъ говорить.

*The snow is ceasing. She does not cease talking.*

Дождь скоро перестанетъ. Дождь пересталъ.

*The rain will soon cease. The rain has stopped.*

Онъ пересталъ къ намъ ходить. Перестаньте !

*He has stopped coming to see us. Leave off !*

Перестать ?

*Shall I stop (sc. doing anything) ?*

Дѣждикъ, дѣждикъ перестань, мы поѣдемъ на Иорданъ,

Богу помолитесь, Христу поклонитесь !

*Rain, rain, stop, we will go to the Jordan, to pray to  
God, and bow down to Christ ! (Russian nursery  
rhyme).*

Приставать, пристать = *to approach, importune.*

Пароходъ присталъ къ берегу (пристань *f.*).

*The steamer has moored to the bank (landing-stage).*

Онъ ко мнѣ пристаётъ. Чего вы пристаёте ?

*He gives me no peace. What do you keep worrying me  
for ?*

Разставаться, разстаться = to part company.

Мы съ вами разстанемся здѣсь. Разстанемся!

We (i.e. you and I) will part company here. Let us part!

Гдѣ вы съ нимъ разстались? Онѣ разстались.

Where did you leave him? They have parted.

Мы съ ней разстались. Она со мной разсталась.

I parted company with her. She parted company with me.

Непріятно съ друзьями разставаться.

It is unpleasant saying good-bye to friends.

Намъ надо разстаться. Я не хочу (не могу) съ вами разстаться.

We must part company. I don't want to (cannot) say good-bye to you.

Миръ устанетъ отъ мукъ. XX! Nads on Semantov

Уставать, устать = to grow tired; усталость (f.) = fatigue.

Она скоро устаётъ. Я боюсь, что вы устанете.

She soon gets tired. I am afraid that you will get tired.

Вы очень устанете. Я ужасно устала (устала).

You will get very tired. I am awfully tired (fem.).

Вы устали? Я нисколько не устала (устала).

Are you tired? I am not in the least tired (fem.).

N.B. to tire oneself is утомляться (ipfv.), утомиться (pfv.); to tire anybody is утомлять (ipfv.), утомить (pfv.).

Это меня утомляетъ. Она меня утомила.

That tires me. She exhausted me.

Это очень утомительно.

That is very tiring.

Ули Бури забываемъ ты, мой другъ, утомлен XXII! Pushkin  
Миръ... утомится безудной борьбой XXV Nads on



## CHAPTER 42

TO SET, TO PLACE, TO PUT : СТАВИТЬ, ПОСТАВИТЬ

A verb derived from the root *ста-*, but with transitive, causative meaning is that which means *to set (put, make to stand, especially big things, such as furniture)* :

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	ста́вить	stávit'	поста́вить	pastávit'
<i>Present</i>	(я) ста́влю	stávlyu	поста́влю	pastávlyu
	(онъ) ста́вить	stávit	поста́вить	pastávit
	(они́) ста́вятъ	stávyat	поста́вятъ	pastávyat
<i>Past</i>	(онъ) ста́вилъ	stávil	поста́вилъ	pastávil
<i>Imperative</i>	ста́вьте	stá'f'tye	поста́вьте	pastá'f'tye

The *imperfective* derivative *поставлять* is also used instead of *ста́вить*, and has the secondary meaning *to deliver or provide goods*.

**Present**

Ста́вятъ посу́ду сюда́. Прислу́га ста́вить самова́ръ.  
*They put the crockery here. The servant is setting (preparing) the samovar.*

**Future (Pfv. ; ipfv. seldom used)**

Я поста́влю свой чемодáнь сюда́ (ог тутъ).  
*I shall put my trunk (or bag) here.*

Кудá вы поcтáвите вашъ сундúкъ ?

*Where shall you put your box ?*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Она поcтáвила стакáны и графíнъ на поднóсь.

*She put the tumblers and the water-bottle on a tray.*

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Не cтáвьте éто тудá !

*Don't put that there !*

✱

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Пocтáвьте éто сюдá ! Пocтáвьте лáмпу на столъ.

*Put that here ! Put the lamp on the table.*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Я хочú поcтáвить вамъ вопрóсь.

*I want to put (ask) you a question.*

Éто мóжно (нáдо, лúчше, нельзá, не нáдо) поcтáвить сюдá.

*(You) may (must, had better, can't, mustn't) put that here.*

Кудá вы хотíte éто поcтáвить ?

*Where do you want to put that ?*

N.B. This verb must not be used when *to put* means *to lay*.

*Дамъ тебѣ я на дорогу образокъ святой;  
 Пти его, моляся Богу, ставь передъ собой.*

▽ *Lemmata*

## CHAPTER 43

TO LEAVE (transitive): ОСТАВЛЯТЬ, ОСТАВИТЬ<sup>1</sup>

From *ста́вить* are derived the following, the commonest of which is the transitive verb meaning *to leave*.<sup>2</sup>

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	оставля́ть	astavlyáit'	оста́вить	astávit'
<i>Present</i>	(я) оставля́ю	astavlyáyu	оста́влю	astávlyu
	(онъ) оставля́етъ	astavlyáyet	оста́витъ	astávit
	(они́) оставля́ютъ	astavlyáyut	оста́вятъ	astávvyat
<i>Past</i>	(онъ) оставля́л	astavlyál	оста́вил	astávil
<i>Imperative</i>	оставля́йте	astavlyáitye	оста́вьте	astáif'tye

Followed or preceded by *себѣ* this verb means *to keep possession of*, but for another equally common way of expressing *to keep possession of* cf. pp. 130, 131.

## Present

Онъ меня́ не оставя́етъ въ поко́ѣ.  
He never leaves me in peace.

Котору́ю ко́мнату (кото́рое мѣсто) вы себѣ оставя́ете?  
Which room (which place) are you keeping for yourself?

<sup>1</sup> For *to leave* = *to depart*, cf. pp. 86, 103.

<sup>2</sup> Not to be confused with the intransitive *оставаться, остаться* = *to remain*, cf. pp. 129, 132.

**Future (Pfv.)**

Вы меня не оставите здѣсь? Я васъ на короткое время оставлю.

*You won't leave me here? I shall leave you for a short time.*

Вы оставите свой (отъ вашъ) адресъ?

*Will you leave your address?*

Вы это оставите себѣ? Я это себѣ оставлю.

*Shall you keep this? I shall keep this.*

“Вы не оставите меня.” Pushkin. 2.6  
(forsake.) **Past (Pfv.)**

Я оставилъ его тамъ. Вы ничего не оставили?

*I left him there. You have left nothing behind?*

Она оставила у насъ свой перчатки, свой носовой платокъ, свою сумочку и свой зонтикъ.

*She left behind at our house her gloves, her handkerchief, her little handbag, and her umbrella.*

Я себѣ оставилъ эту комнату.

*I have kept (am keeping) this room.*

Вы себѣ довольно оставили (денегъ)?

*Have you kept enough (money) for yourself?*

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Не оставляйте меня (здѣсь одногò, одну f.)!

*Don't leave me (here all alone)!*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Оставьте меня въ покоѣ. Оставьте это себѣ.

*Leave me alone (in peace). Keep that for yourself.*

## Infinitive (Pfv.)

Я не хочу́ (не могу́, долженъ) васъ оста́вить.

*I don't want to (can't, must) leave you.*

Я хочу́ это себѣ оста́вить.

*I want to keep this (for myself).*

Вы можете оста́вить (вашъ) адре́съ и но́меръ телефо́на ?

*Can you leave your address and telephone number ?*

Можно́ это́ (я бою́сь) здѣсь (у васъ) оста́вить ?

*May I (I am afraid to) leave this here (with you) ?*

Вѣщи ва́ши можно́ пока́ здѣсь оста́вить.

*You can leave your things here for the present.*

N.B. *to leave* = *to depart* : уѣхать, уйти, cf. pp. 86, 103.

*to leave* = *to bequeath* : завѣщать (*ipfv.*, like думать). 2.2

*to leave off* : переставать, перестать, cf. p. 135.

## CHAPTER 44

## OTHER COMPOUNDS OF -СТАВЛЯТЬ AND -СТАВИТЬ

Other useful compounds of this verb and cognate words are (compounds of -ставлять are *ipfv.*, of -ставить *pfv.*) :

Вставля́ть, вста́вить = *to fix (one thing into another)*.

Вы́ставка (*f.*) = *an exhibition*.

Доставля́ть, доста́вить = *to procure* ; especially in the phrase

д. удовольствіе = *to give pleasure*.

Это́ мнѣ не доставля́етъ никако́го удовольствія.

*That gives me no pleasure.*

Это́ ей доста́вить большо́е удовольствіе.

*That will give her great pleasure.*

Э́то намъ достáвило большóе удовóльствіе.

*This gave us great pleasure (sc. we enjoyed this very much).*

Заставля́ть, заставля́ть = *to compel, make, force.*

Наставля́ть, наставля́ть = *to instruct, admonish*

Отста́вка (f.) = *retirement*; онъ подалъ въ отста́вку = *he has resigned.*

Подставля́ть, подставля́ть = *to put, set under.*

Предоставля́ть, предоставля́ть = *to leave to the choice, to leave it to.*

Представля́ть, представля́ть = *to present, to introduce (a person), to represent.* *imagine - cf p. 56*

Позво́льте вамъ предста́вить моего́ дру́га.

*Allow me to introduce my friend to you.*

Предста́вьте! Я (не) могу́ себѣ предста́вить!

*Just fancy! I can(not) imagine!*

Мо́жете себѣ предста́вить? Предста́вленіе (n.).

*Will you believe it! A theatrical performance.*

Приставля́ть, приста́вить = *to place against.*

При́ставъ (m.) = *the commissary of police.*

Разставля́ть, разставля́ть = *to set apart, about, to distribute.*

Составля́ть, составля́ть = *to compose, constitute, form.*

Соста́въ (m.) = *composition (sc. not of music), structure, formation, complement, crew.*

Уставля́ть, уставля́ть = *to set in order, arrange, to fix (one's eyes on).*

Frequentative imperfectives are also formed from this verb in -ста́вливать, but they are seldom used.

## CHAPTER 45

## TO PUT : ДѢВАТЬ, ДѢТЬ

There is another verb meaning to *put* which is also commonly used ; it has a more colloquial and often rather derogatory meaning, like our *to shove, to stick*. It is moreover important on account of the verbs derived from it, and is given here in full :

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	дѢВАТЬ	dyevá't'	дѢТЬ	dyé't'
<i>Present</i>				
(я)	дѢВАЮ	dyeváyu	дѢНУ	dyé <sup>a</sup> nu
(ОНЪ)	дѢВАЕТЪ	dyeváyet	дѢНЕТЪ	dyé <sup>i</sup> nyet
(ОНІ)	дѢВАЮТЪ	dyeváyut	дѢНУТЪ	dyé <sup>a</sup> nut
<i>Past</i>				
(ОНЪ)	дѢВАЛЪ	dyevál	дѢЛЪ	dyé <sup>a</sup> l
<i>Imperative (seldom used)</i>				
	[дѢВАЙТЕ	dyeváitye	дѢНЬТЕ	dyé <sup>i</sup> n'tye]

This verb is transitive ; it becomes intransitive with the addition of the reflexive pronoun *-ся* and acquires the meaning of our *to get to, to become of*.

**Present (seldom used)****Future (Pfv.)**

Куда вы дѢнете всѣ эти вещи ?—всѣ ваши книги ?  
*Where will you put all these things ?—all your books ?*

Куда я теперь дѢнусь ?  
*What will become of me now ?*

**Past** (*Ipfv.* and *Pfv.*)

Кудá вы дѣвáли (ог дѣли) всё моё бѣльё ?  
*What have you done with all my linen ?*

Я не знáю, кудá я дѣлѣ свой кошелёкъ.  
*I don't know what I have done with my purse.*

Кудá дѣлась моá кнѣга ? Кудá дѣлся мой чемодáнь ?  
*Where has my book got to ? What's happened to my trunk ?*

Кудá дѣлись моѣ ключѣ ? Кудá онѣ дѣлся ?  
*Where have my keys got to ? Where has he got to ?*

**Infinitive** (*Ipfv.* and *Pfv.*)

Кудá мнѣ дѣвáться (ог дѣться) отъ нихъ ?  
*How am I to get away from them ?*

From this verb meaning to *put* is derived a series of important verbs meaning to *put clothes on and off*. They are conjugated exactly like *дѣвáть* and *дѣть*.

## CHAPTER 46

*TO DRESS* (to *put clothes on and off*): compounds of ДѢВÁТЬ and ДѢТЬ

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>				
	одѣвáться	adyevá'ts(y)a <sup>1</sup>	одѣться	adyé'ats(y)a <sup>1</sup>
<i>Present</i>				
	одѣвáюсь	adyevá'yus'	одѣнусь	adyé'anus'
		&c.		

*To dress another person* is : одѣвáть (*ipfv.*), одѣть (*pfv.*).

*To put on clothes* : надѣвáть (*ipfv.*), надѣть (*pfv.*).

<sup>1</sup> Cf. p. 129, note 1.



To change one's clothes : переодѣваться (*ipfv.*), переодѣться (*pfv.*).

To undress (oneself) : раздѣваться (*ipfv.*), раздѣться (*pfv.*).

Both these latter also become transitive with the omission of the reflexive pronoun -ся.

The Past Participles Passive of these verbs are very commonly used, cf. p. 148.

*одежда* Present *раздежда*

Я одѣваюсь. Я переодѣваюсь. Я раздѣваюсь.  
I am dressing. I am changing. I am undressing.

Она ужасно долго одѣвается.  
She takes a terribly long time to get dressed.

Она хорошо одѣвается. Онъ одѣвается плохо.  
She dresses well. He dresses badly.

Онъ надѣваетъ шубу и калоши.  
He is putting on a fur-coat and galoshes (snow-boots).

#### Future (*Ipfv.*)

Онъ теперѣ будетъ одѣваться лучше.  
He will now (in future) dress better.

Я теперѣ буду одѣваться (переодѣваться, раздѣваться).  
I am now going to dress (to change, to undress). This term implies a leisurely action.

#### Future (*Pfv.*)

Я тепло одѣнусь (легко, по-зимнему, по-лѣтнему).  
I shall dress warmly (lightly, as in winter, as in summer).

Вы переодѣнетесь сегодня передъ обѣдомъ?  
Shall you change to-day before dinner?

Я переодѣнусь (or я перемѣню своё платье).

*I shall change my dress (or suit; 'перемѣню' also means 'I shall exchange,' cf. p. 207).*

Я теперь раздѣнусь. Гдѣ вы раздѣнетесь?

*I shall now undress. Where shall you undress?*

Какое платье (какой костюмъ) вы сегодня надѣнете?

*Which dress (which suit) shall you put on to-day?*

Я надѣну фракъ, смѣкингъ, сѣрый (синій) костюмъ.

*I shall put on a dress-coat, a dinner jacket, a grey (blue) suit.*

#### Past (Ipfv.)

Прѣжде она одѣвалась очень плохо.

*Formerly she used to dress very badly.*

Я одѣвался когда вы пришлі.

*I was dressing when you came.*

Онъ раздѣвался въ своей комнатѣ.

*He was undressing in his room.*

Я всю ночь не раздѣвался.

*I didn't get my clothes off all night.*

#### Past (Pfv.)

Онъ всталъ, умылся, одѣлся, и напился чаю.

*He got up, washed, got dressed, and had breakfast.*

Почему вы не переодѣлись?

*Why have you not changed?*

Онъ раздѣлся (она раздѣлась) и лёгъ (легла) спать.

*He (she) undressed and lay down to sleep (went to bed).*

Она сегодня надѣла новое, чёрное платье.

*She put on a new black dress to-day.*

Здѣсь твердыми стѣнами одѣла я дикой берегъ:  
*Here with hard stones I re-dressed the wild banks (of stream)*  
 XIX Shishkov.

Онъ надѣль пальто и пошѣль гулять.

*He put on an overcoat and went for a walk.*

**Imperative** (*Ipfv.*; *pfv.* not used)

Одѣвайтесь по-скорѣе !

*Get dressed as quick as you can !*

Не переодѣвайтесь сегодня къ обѣду !

*Don't change for dinner to-night !*

Раздѣвайтесь до нага !

*Strip yourself naked !*

**Infinitive** (*Ipfv.*)

Порá (пойти) одѣваться (раздѣваться).

*It is time (to go) to dress (to undress).*

Она не умѣетъ одѣваться.

*She does not know how to dress.*

Въ Россіи зимой надо тепло одѣваться.

*In Russia in winter one has to dress warmly.*

Здѣсь нельзя раздѣваться.

*You mustn't undress here.*

**Infinitive** (*Pfv.*)

Надо сегодня одѣться по-теплѣе.

*One must dress as warmly as possible to-day.*

Теперь надо пойти одѣться.

*Now one must go and get dressed.*

Сегодня вечеромъ придется (cf. p. 70) переодѣться.

*It will be necessary to change this evening.*

Теперь надо раздѣться.

*Now we must get undressed.*

Что мнѣ надѣть ?

*What shall I put on ?*

Какую шляпу мнѣ надѣть сегодня ?

*What hat shall I put on to-day ?*

(Predicative) Past Participle Passive

Онъ уже одѣтъ. Она ещё не одѣта.

*He is already dressed. She is not yet dressed.*

Онѣ всегда хорошо одѣты. Я ещё раздѣтъ.

*They are always well dressed. I am still undressed.*

Нельзя входить (ог не надо), я раздѣта.

*You mustn't (don't) come in, I am undressed.*

Вы скоро будете одѣты? Черезъ пять минутъ буду одѣтъ.

*Shall you soon be dressed ? In five minutes I shall be dressed.*

Въ чёмъ (ог какъ) она будетъ сегодня одѣта ?

*In what (how) will she be dressed to-day ?*

Она была одѣта вся въ чёрномъ.

*She was dressed all in black.*

Въ чёмъ вы были вчера одѣты ?

*What had you on yesterday ?*

Она была модно, элегантно, изящно одѣта.

*She was fashionably, elegantly, exquisitely dressed.*

Она всегда съ большимъ вкусомъ одѣта.

*She is always dressed in good (lit. with great) taste.*

Cognate expressions

Одежда (*f.*) = *clothing* (the peasants always say : одежа).

With these must not be confused the verb, derived from the same source, meaning *to hope*, cf. p. 320.

## CHAPTER 47

TO PUT, TO LAY : КЛАСТЬ, ПОЛОЖИТЬ (ПОЛАГАТЬ)  
AND THEIR COMPOUNDS

There is yet a third way of expressing *to put* which is in a general way more common than either of the others ; in this case the two aspects are supplied by two quite distinct verbs :

	<i>Imperfective.</i>		<i>Perfective.</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	класть	klast'	положить <sup>2</sup>	palazhýt' <sup>2</sup>
<i>Present</i>	(я) кладу́	kladú	положу́	palazhú
	(онъ) кладётъ	kladyót	положитъ <sup>2</sup>	palózhyt <sup>2</sup>
	(онí) кладу́тъ	kladút	положатъ	palózhat
<i>Past</i>	(онъ) клалъ <sup>1</sup>	klal <sup>1</sup>	положилъ <sup>2</sup>	palazhýl <sup>2</sup>
<i>Imperative</i>	кладите	kladyíte	положите <sup>2</sup>	palazhýtye <sup>2</sup>

Класть is the most ordinary word for *to put* without specifying *manner* (e.g. *setting* or *laying*) ; it is especially commonly used of putting things away into drawers, &c., and putting ingredients into food. Положить is used as its *perfective* in these senses, but also has the specific meaning of *to put down, lay down*, in contrast to поcтáвить which means *to set down* (cf. pp. 137, 138).

<sup>1</sup> The *fem.* is accented either клáла or клалá.

<sup>2</sup> и after ж = ы (у), cf. pp. 2, 21, 22.

*Кладу́тъ* ... *положатъ* ... *кладите* ... *положите* ...

**Present**

Кудá кладуть багажъ ? Кудá вы кладёте мой вѣщи ?  
*Where do they put the luggage ? Where are you putting my things ?*

**Future (Pfv. ; ipfv. not used)**

Я положу́ это сюда́ (туда́) ; кудá вы положите чемоданъ ?  
*I shall put this here (there) ; where will you put the trunk ?*

Я положу́ билеты, бума́жки и па́спортъ въ свой портфѣль.  
*I shall put the tickets, notes, and the passport in my pocket-book.*

Я положу́ деньги въ ящикъ (себѣ въ карма́нъ).  
*I shall put the money into the drawer or box (into my pocket).*

**Past (Ipfv.)**

Вы уже́ кла́ли са́хару (соли, перцу, ма́сла, уксу́са) ?  
*Have you already put in some sugar (salt, pepper, oil, vinegar) ?*

Нѣтъ, (я вамъ) не кла́ла (*fem.*).  
*No, I haven't (I have would be положи́ла).*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Онъ положи́лъ деньги себѣ́ въ кошелёкъ.  
*He put the money into his purse.*

Я уже́ положи́ла вамъ два кускá са́хару.  
*I have already put you in two lumps of sugar.*

Кудá вы положи́ли мой вѣщи ? Сюда́ (туда́).  
*Where did (have) you put my things ? Here (there).*

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Не кладите́ са́хару ! Не кладите́ сюда́ ниче́го !  
*Don't put any sugar in ! Don't put anything here !*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Положіте моё бѣльё въ комодъ.

*Put my linen in the chest of drawers.*

Положіте три кускá сахара и оди́нь кусо́къ лимона.

*Put in three lumps of sugar and one slice of lemon*

Положіте ва́шу го́лову (ва́шу ру́ку, ва́шу но́гу) сю́да.

*Put your head (your hand or arm, your foot or leg) here.*

**Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

Не на́до (нельзя́) класть тудá тяжёлыхъ вещейъ.

*One mustn't (can't) put heavy things there.*

Какую́ ма́рку на́до положи́ть на это́ письмо́ ?

*What sort of stamp must (I) put on this letter ?*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Куда́ мнѣ́ (на́до) это́ положи́ть ? Мо́жно положи́ть сю́да.

*Where am I to (must I) put this ? You can put it here.*

Положи́ть вамъ ещё́ кусо́къ (мя́са, пирога́) ?

*Shall I give you another piece (of meat, of pie or cake) ?*

Мамъ положи́ть, вели́ мене́.

XI Lemmata

**Cognate words**

Положе́ние (*n.*) = *position*, мѣстоположе́ние (*n.*) = *situation (topographical)*; покла́жа (*f.*) = *a load*, кладовáя (*f.*) = *store-room*, кладъ (*m.*) = *a treasure*.

It must always be remembered that the verb *to put* is used less loosely in Russian than in English ; for instance, when *to put* = *to add liquids, or indivisible matter*, a different verb must be used :

прибавля́ть (*ipfv.*), прибáвить (*pfv.*) ; прибáвить вамъ молоко́, сли́вокъ, зѣлени́ ?

*shall I give you some more milk, cream, greens ?*

прибáвьте мнѣ́ ча́ю (ко́фею), пожа́луйста

*put me in a little more tea (coffee), please.*

(*to dilute, add water* is разбавля́ть (*ipfv.*), разбáвить (*pfv.*).

Положить has another *imperfective* полагать (conjugated like думать) which usually means *to suppose, think*, and положить can be also used as a *perfective* in this sense :

Что вы полагаете дѣлать ? Какъ вы полагаете ?

*What are you thinking of doing ? What is your opinion ?*

Полагаю, что это такъ.

*I suppose it is so.*

Положимъ, что вы правы.

*Let us suppose (or I suppose, granted, I expect) you are right.*

Used reflexively :

Я могу на васъ положиться ?

*I can trust to (rely on) you ?*

And especially in the following idiom :

Это полагается ?

Это не полагается.

*Is this included (in the charge) ? This is not included*

*(or, may one do this ?)*

*(or, that is not allowed).*

Common compound verbs and cognate expressions :

1 Влагать (*ipfv.*), вложить (*pfv.*) } = *to put into.*

2 Вкладывать (*ipfv.*), вклатъ (*pfv.*) }

Возлагать, возложить = *to lay upon, charge, impose.*

3 Докладывать (*ipfv.*), доложить (*pfv.*) = *to report, announce*; доложить о комъ = *to announce any one's arrival*; прошу васъ о мнѣ доложить = *please announce my arrival*; докладъ (*m.*) = *a lecture (e.g. at the university), a report.*

4 Закладывать, заложить = *to pawn, mortgage, pledge*; биться объ закладъ = *to bet, to wager*; залогъ = *a pledge.*

5 Излагать, изложить = *to expound*; изложѣніе (*n.*) = *an essay, exposition.*



7 Налагáть, наложíть = to lay upon, impose (e.g. a fine); налогъ (m.) = a tax.

Облóжка (f.) = an envelope.

8 Откладывáть, } отложíть = to postpone; неотлагáтельно = very  
отлагáть, } urgent; отлóгий (also полбóгий) = sloping, от-  
лбóгость (f.) = a slope.

Подкладáка (f.) = a lining.

9 Предлагáть, предложíть = to suggest, propose; предлб́гъ (m.) = pretext, preposition; предложéние (n.) = proposal.

10 Прокладывáть, проложíть = to make (a road, путь, доро́гу).

11 Раскладывáть, разложíть = to lay out, spread out.

12 Складывáть, сложíть = to put together, fold; складъ (m.) = a store, warehouse; слогъ = a syllable, (literary) style; сложá рýки = with folded hands (present indeclinable participle).

13 Укладывáть, уложíть = to pack, put away; я уложу́ всѣ свои вещи въ этотъ чемодáнь = I shall pack all my things in this trunk; used reflexively = to get packed, to pack, мнѣ нáдо укладывáться = I must pack (sc. my trunk), я ужé уложíлся = I have already packed.

Double compounds :

14 Предполагáть (ipfv.), предположíть (pfv.) = to suppose, pre-suppose; предположéние (n.) = supposition; предполагáется = it is supposed.

15 Располагáть, расположíть = to dispose; онъ (онá) ко мнѣ хорошб́ расположенъ (-положенá) = he (she) is well disposed towards me; гóродъ красíво расположенъ = the town is beautifully situated; расположéние (n.) = disposition, p. дýха (nom. духъ m. = spirit) = mood, humour.

‘ Человѣкъ предполагáетъ, а Богъ располагáетъ.

‘ Man proposes and God disposes.’

12. Умъ ты естíшь, сложивши рýки. VII Труднен.

## CHAPTER 48

TO LIE DOWN (to go to bed) : ЛОЖИТЬСЯ, ЛЕЧЬ

Of the same stock of verbs and similar in form, with a *perfective* apparently different but really cognate, is the *imperfective* verb meaning to lie down (*lay oneself*).

	<i>Imperfective.</i>		<i>Perfective.</i>		
<i>Infinitive</i>	ложиться <sup>1 2</sup>	lazhyt's(y)a <sup>1 2</sup>	лечь	lyé'ch'	
<i>Present</i>					
(я) ложусь	lazhús'		лягу	lyágu	
(онъ) ложитесь <sup>1</sup>	lazhýts(y)a <sup>1</sup>		ляжетъ	lyázhet	
(они) ложатся	lazhát(s)y)a		лягутъ	lyágut	
<i>Past</i>					
(онъ) ложился <sup>1</sup>	lazhýls(y)a <sup>1</sup>		лёгъ	lyók	
(она) ложилась <sup>1</sup>	lazhýlas' <sup>1</sup>		легла	lyeglá	
(они) ложились <sup>1</sup>	lazhýlyis' <sup>1</sup>		легли	lyeglyí	
<i>Imperative</i>					
ложись <sup>1</sup>	lazhýs' <sup>1</sup>	irre- gular	{	лягъ	lyák
ложитесь <sup>1</sup>	lazhýtyes' <sup>1</sup>			лягте	lyáktye

## Present

Я ложусь (мы ложимся) очень рано (поздно).

*I (we) go to bed (i.e. lay myself down) very early (late).*

Вы когда (от въ которомъ часу) ложитесь ?

*At what time (o'clock) do you go to bed ?*

The addition of the verb спать (= to sleep) is optional ;

<sup>1</sup> и after ж = ы (у), cf. pp. 2, 21, 22.

<sup>2</sup> Colloquially pronounced : tsa, sa.

other synonymous expressions are ложиться въ постель (to bed), and идти́ or пойти́ спать = to go to bed, cf. pp. 79, 275.

**Future (Pfv. ; ipfv. seldom used)**

Я теперь лягу (or пойду́ спать).

*I shall now lie down (also = I shall now go to bed).*

**Past (Ipfv.)**

Дома (у нихъ) вы когда ложились ?

*When used you to go bed at home (at their house) ?*

Я ложился спать когда вы приѣхали.

*I was going to bed when you arrived.*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Она легла на диванъ. Они уже (давно) легли.

*She lay down on the sofa. They have already (long) gone to bed.* На сердце раздуше легло. VIII. A.Tolst

Онъ ещё не лёгъ. Мы вчера поздно легли.

*He has not yet gone to bed. We went to bed late last night.*

Прикѣс — и ослабеть, и лёгъ IV. Pushkin

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Не ложитесь такъ рано.

*Don't go to bed so early.*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Лягте на постель, на спину (навзничъ), ницъ (ничкомъ).

*Lie down on the bed, on your back, prone.*

**Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

Я не люблю такъ поздно ложиться. Пора ложиться.

*I don't like going to bed so late. It is time to go to bed.*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Я хочу лечь на минуточку (на четверть часа).

*I want to lie down for a minute (for quarter of an hour).*

From this verb are derived others such as :

Улегаться (ipfv. ; like думать), улечься (pfv.) = *to compose oneself to sleep, to turn in.*

Прилечь (pfv.) = *to lie down for a minute's rest.*

**CHAPTER 49****TO LIE (to be in bed) : ЛЕЖАТЬ**

Connected with these is the verb meaning *to lie*.

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	лежать	lyezhá't'	полежать	palyezhá't'
<i>Present</i>	(я) лежѹ	lyezhú	(= to lie a short while)	
	(онѣ) лежѣтъ	lyezhý't	пролежать	pralyezhá't'
	(онѣ) лежѣтъ	lyezhát	(= to lie a long while)	
<i>Past</i>	(онѣ) лежалъ	lyezhál		
<i>Imperative</i>	лежѣте	lyezhý'tye		

**Present**

Собака лежѣтъ на полу. Она сегодня лежѣтъ.

*The dog is lying on the floor. She is not getting up to-day.*

Въ этомъ году (огъ эту зиму) снѣгъ долго лежѣтъ.

*The snow lies for a long time this year (this winter).*

**Future (Ipfv.)**

Вы долго еще будете лежать ?

*Shall you stay a long time in bed still ?*

Убогъ лежу и сижу.

*I lie crippled and bereaved. XIX shishkoo.*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Я полежѹ ещё немно́жко.

*I shall stay in bed a little longer.*

**Past (Ipfv.)**

Она́ лежала́ въ постѣли.

*She was lying (or lay) in bed.*

Всѣмъ она́ лежала въ забытѣ  
Тучев.

**Past (Pfv.)**

Она́ пролежала́ мѣсяцъ въ лѣчебницѣ.

*She lay a whole month in the nursing-home.*

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Лежіте ! = *don't get up (continue lying) !*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Полежіте ещё часо́къ (diminutive of часъ).

*Don't get up for another hour (or so).*

**Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

Я люблю́ лежать́ до́лго ўтромъ.

*I like staying in bed a long time in the morning.*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Докторъ велѣлъ мнѣ ещё полежать́.

*The doctor told me not to get up just yet.*

**Present Indeclinable Participle**

Лѣжа = *in a lying position.*

Derived directly from this verb are :

Принадлежать́ (only *ipfv.*) = *to belong*; это́ мнѣ не принадле-  
житьъ = *this doesn't belong to me.*

The use of this verb is comparatively infrequent owing to the number of possessive adjectives, and to the use of the pronoun чей = *whose*, cf. *F. R. B.*, pp. 56, 67.

Подлежѣть (only *ipfv.*) = to be liable to; ѣто не подлежѣтъ никакому сомнѣнїю = *this is not open to the slightest doubt*; подлежащее = (*n. present participle*) = *subject* (of a sentence).

N.B. *To lie* (to tell a lie) = (1) лгать (*ipfv.*; *pres.* лгу, лжѣтъ, лгутъ, *past* лгалъ), солгать (*pfv.*); ложь (*f.*) = *a falsehood*; (2) врать (*ipfv.*; *pres.* вру, врѣтъ, врутъ, *past* вралъ), соврать (*pfv.*); врать is commoner and less serious than лгать, and is often the equivalent of *to romance* or *to make a mistake*.

## CHAPTER 50

*TŌ SIT DOWN* (to take a seat) : САДѢТЬСЯ, СѢСТЬ

Exactly corresponding in formation to the verbs which mean *to lie down* and *to lie* are those meaning *to sit down* and *to sit*; corresponding to ложѣться and лечь are the verbs meaning *to sit down* (*set oneself*).

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>				
	садѣться <sup>1</sup>	sadyít's(y)a <sup>1</sup>	сѣсть	syé'st'
<i>Present</i>				
(я) сажу́сь	sazhús'		сѣду	syádu
(онѣ) садѣтся <sup>1</sup>	sadyíts(y)a <sup>1</sup>		сѣдетъ	syádyet
(онѣ) садѣтѣя <sup>1</sup>	sadyáts(y)a <sup>1</sup>		сѣдутъ	syádut
<i>Past</i>				
(онѣ) садѣлся <sup>1</sup>	sadyíls(y)a <sup>1</sup>		сѣлъ	syé'al
(онѣ) садѣлась	sadyílas'		сѣла	syé'ala
(онѣ) садѣлись	sadyílis'		сѣли	syé'ilyi
<i>Imperative</i>				
садѣсь	sadyís'		сѣдь	syá't'
садѣтѣсь	sadyítYES'		сѣдѣте	syá'ttYE

<sup>1</sup> Colloquially pronounced : tsa, sa.

**Present**

Ужé садятся за столъ. Сóлнце садится.

*They are already sitting down to table. The sun is setting.*

Она́ вхóдитъ въ кóмнату и садится на стуль.

*She comes into the room and sits down on a chair.*

**Future** (*Pfv.* ; *ipfv.* seldom used)

Я сяду здéсь вóзлѣ васъ. Гдѣ вы сядете ?

*I shall sit (down) here next to you. Where shall you sit (down) ?*

Мы сядемъ на пароходъ въ Ры́бинскѣ.

*We shall get on board the steamer at Rybinsk.*

**Past** (*Pfv.* ; *ipfv.* seldom used)

Мы сѣли за столъ. Она́ сѣла въ крѣсло.

*We (have) sat down to table. She sat down in an arm-chair.*

Онъ сѣлъ на сидѣнье (на скамейку, на своё мѣсто).

*He sat down on the seat (on the bench, in his place).*

Сѣлъ въ кибитку и скачу.

**Imperative** (*Ipfv.*)

*I have sat in the carriage and am galloping.*  
X X II A. Tolstói

Садитесь, пожалуйста !

*Be seated, please ! (polite form)*

**Imperative** (*Pfv.*)

Сядьте ! Сядемъ тутъ.

*Sit down ! (peremptory) Let us sit down here.*

**Infinitive** (*Ipfv.*)

Прошú васъ садиться !

*Pray be seated !*

**Infinitive** (*Pfv.*)

Мóжно сѣсть тутъ ? Нéгдѣ сѣсть (cf. p. 52). Сѣсть намъ ?

*May I sit (down) here ? There is nowhere to sit. Shall we sit down ?*

## CHAPTER 51

TO SIT (*to be sitting*): СИДѢТЬ

Connected with these, and exactly corresponding to лежѣть, is the verb meaning *to sit*.

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	сидѣть	sidyét'	посидѣть	pasidyét'
<i>Present</i>	(я) сижу́	sizhú	(= to sit a short while)	
	(онъ) сиди́тъ	sidyít	просидѣть	prasilyét'
	(они́) сидя́тъ	sidyát	(= to sit a long while)	
<i>Past</i>	(онъ) сидѣ́лъ	sidyé <sup>al</sup>		
<i>Imperative</i>	сиди́те	sidyíte		

Сижу я задумчиво въ ней; (коляска).

Сижу и смотрю я дорогой Present

Сидаю на травѣ мужики.

XIV A. Tolstoi

Гдѣ вы обыкновенно сидите? Вы давно сидите здѣсь?

*Where do you usually sit? Have you been sitting here long?*

Я сижу́ у окна́, за столóмъ, на сту́лѣ, въ креслѣ́.

*I am sitting by the window, at table, on a chair, in an arm-chair.*

**Future (Ipfv.)**

Вы бóдете сидѣть или бóдете стоять?

*Shall you sit or shall you stand?*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Я немно́жко посижу́, я бóчень устáлъ.

*I shall sit for a little, I am very tired.*



Past (Ipfv.)

Мы долго сидѣли вчера вѣчеромъ

We sat up very late last night.

Сидѣла я подлѣ плѣномъ и думала,

Сидѣла надо мной соловей.

Такіе же у мальчицы шат

Сидѣли въ травѣ мужики

XIV

А. Т. Толст.

А. Т. Толст.

Imperative (Ipfv.)

Сидѣте ! = don't get up (continue to sit) !

Imperative (Pfv.)

Посидѣ(те) ещё немножко со мной.

Sit a little longer with me.

Infinitive (Ipfv.)

Я не люблю долго сидѣть по вечерамъ.

I don't like sitting up late at night.

Долго ли буду я

Подлѣ окна сидѣть ?

Игнѣ, уже полно мнѣ

Дома вѣкъ сидѣть.

Infinitive (Pfv.)

Я хочу посидѣть съ вами (съ тобѣй).

I want to sit a little with you (with thee).

XVIII Koltsov

## Present Indeclinable Participle

Сидя = in a sitting position.

This verb is often used negatively with the reflexive pronoun as an impersonal verb with the following meaning :

Мнѣ не сидѣтся ; ему не сидѣтся дома (— на мѣстѣ).

I feel restless, have got the fidgets ; he won't stop at home (— still).

## Cognate word

Сидѣнье (n.) = a seat (the seat of a carriage, for instance).

Derived from the same root, and exactly corresponding to the transitive verbs (-лагать) положить (cf. pp. 149-153) are the transitive verbs which mean

*to set (put in a sitting position, plant, make sit).*

Сажать (*ipfv.*, like думать; or садить (*ipfv.*), *pres.* сажу, сáдитъ), посадить (*pfv.*) = *to set*; деревья сажают осенью = *they plant trees in the autumn* (sc. trees are planted); онъ посадилъ меня вóзлѣ себя = *he made me sit down next to him*, егó посадили подъ арестъ = *they placed him under arrest*; гдѣ вы посадите это дерево = *where shall you plant this tree?*

Садъ (*m.*) = *garden*, садовникъ = *gardener*; сажа (*f.*) = *soot*.

Compound verbs and derivative words.

Досáдно = *it is vexing, provoking*, какáя досáда = *what a pity!*

Засáда (*f.*) = *an ambush*; засѣданіе (*n.*) = *session*.

Осáда (*f.*) = *siege*.

Пересáживаться, пересѣсть = *to change (places, trains)*; пересáдка (*f.*) = *a change of trains or carriages*, безъ пересáдки = *without changing trains*, безпересáдочный вагóнъ = *through carriage*, -ное (огъ прямóе) сообщеніе = *through communication*; на границѣ надо пересáживаться = *one must change at the frontier*, надо пересѣсть въ другóй пóѣздъ = *one must change into another train*.

Предсѣдатель (*m.*) = *President*.

Присѣсть (*pfv.*) = *to sit down for a minute* (cf. прилечь, p. 156).

Разсáдникъ (*m.*) = *a nursery garden*.

Усáживаться, усѣсться = *to take one's place, to settle oneself down* (cf. улечься, p. 156).

## CHAPTER 52

## TO TAKE : БРАТЬ, ВЗЯТЬ

As in the case of класть and положить (cf. p. 149) the two aspects of this verb are supplied by two quite distinct verbs :

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>				
	брать	brát'	ВЗЯТЬ	vzyát'
<i>Present</i>				
	(я) берú	b(y)erú	ВОЗЬМУ	vaz'mú
	(онъ) берётъ	b(y)eryót	ВОЗЬМЁТЪ	vaz'myót
	(онí) берúтъ	b(y)erút	ВОЗЬМУТЪ	vaz'mút
<i>Past</i>				
	(онъ) бралъ	bral	ВЗЯЛЪ	vzyál
	(онá) бралá	bralá	ВЗЯЛá	vzyalá
	(онí) брали	bráli	ВЗЯЛИ	vzyáli
<i>Imperative</i>				
	берите	b(y)eritye	ВОЗЬМИТЕ	vaz'mitye

**Present**

Я берú уроки рúскаго языка ; у когó ?

*I am taking lessons of the Russian language ; from whom ?*

Въ этóмъ магазинѣ берúтъ очень дóрого.

*In that (or this) shop they charge a great deal.*

Вы берёте съ собою зóнтикъ ?

*Are you taking an umbrella with you ?*

Я берú холóдную (тёплую, горячую) ванну.

*I take a cold (warm, hot) bath.*

"Вань онъ руку берётъ"<sup>М 2</sup> Kultur IX

**Future (Ipfv.)**

Я б́уду брать уро́ки му́зыки ка́ждый день.  
*I shall have music-lessons every day.*

Она́ б́удетъ брать уро́ки пѣнія и рисо́ванія.  
*She is going to take singing and painting lessons.*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Я возьму́ съ собо́й чемоданъ и пальто́.  
*I shall take a trunk (bag) and an overcoat with me.*

Онъ до́рого возьме́тъ. Вы что возьме́те ?  
*He will charge a lot. What will you take (sc. carry) ?*

Я возьму́ ещё немно́жко э́того блю́да.  
*I will help myself to a little more of this dish.*

„и возьме́шь ружье́.“ (сержантъ) V'  
**Past (Ipfv.)**

Вы у когó бра́ли уро́ки ?  
*From whom did you have lessons ?*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Вы взя́ли де́ньги ? Съ меня́ взя́ли поря́дочно.  
*Did (have) you take(n) the money ? They charged me a good deal.*

Какія́ кнѣ́ги вы съ собо́й взя́ли ?  
*What books did (have) you take(n) with you ?*

Вы о́чень ма́ло взя́ли. Ско́лько взя́лъ ?  
*You have taken very little (sc. of a dish). How much did he charge ?*

Его́́ взя́ли въ плѣ́нь. Она́́ взя́ла́ меня́́ съ собо́́ей ту́да́.  
*They took him prisoner. She took me with her there.*

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Не берите это (or этого) ! Берите !  
*Don't take that ! Take (this ! polite form).*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Возьмите ! Возьмите меня съ собой !  
*Take (this ! more peremptory, sc. catch hold ! ) Take me with you !*

Чортъ возьми ! *Чортъ возьми !*  
*Devil take it ! (the approximate equivalent of 'Damn !')*

**Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

Я хочу у когó-нибудь брать уроки.  
*I want to have lessons from somebody.*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Лучше взять это. Надо взять съ собой пальто.  
*Better take this. (We) must take our overcoats with us.*

Надо взять деньги у когó-нибудь въ займы.  
*(We) must borrow money from somebody (cf. p. 168).*

Used reflexively this verb means *to take to, to undertake*: надо взяться за работу = *(I) must get to work*; я за это возьмусь = *I will undertake that*; it can also mean *to appear*: откúда ши возьмётся собака = *suddenly (goodness knows whence) there appeared a dog*; откúда вы взялись ? = *where have you sprung from ?*

In the reflexive forms of this verb and all its derivatives (cf. pp. 168, 169) the accent in the past goes to the last syllable: ся́, -ась, -ось, -ись.

## CHAPTER 53

## COMPOUNDS OF -БИРАТЬ AND БРАТЬ

The compounds of these two verbs fall into two categories, those formed from *брать*, and those derived from the root contained in *взять*.

*Imperfectives* formed from *брать* insert *и* in the stem, and these *imperfectives* are then conjugated like *думать*; compounds of *брать* are *perfective*.

Some of the commonest compounds and cognate words are :

- 1 *Выбирать* (*ipfv.*), *выбрать* (*pfv.*) = *to choose*; *выберите мнѣ хорошее мѣсто* (-шее кáчество, хороши́й сортъ) = *choose me a good place (a good quality, a nice quality, kind, or sort)*; *на́до что́-нибудь вы́брать, т́рудно вы́брать* = *(we) must choose something, it is difficult to choose*; *вы кото́рую кни́гу вы́брали?* = *which book did (have) you choose (chosen)?*; *оче́нь большо́й вы́боръ* = *there is a very large choice*; *ма́ло вы́бора* = *there is little choice*.
- 2 *Добра́ться до* + *gen.* (*pfv.*) = *to attain, reach with effort*.
- 3 *Забра́ться на, въ* + *acc.* (*pfv.*) = *to find one's way on to, into*; *забо́ръ* (*m.*) = *a fence*.
- 4 *Набра́ться* (*pfv.*) = *to collect a quantity (of anything)*.
- 5 *Подбира́ть, подобра́ть* (*подберу́*) = *to pick up, gather up, match colours or materials*.
- 6 *Прибира́ть, прибра́ть* = *to clean, clear, tidy up, put away*; *мо́жете прибра́ть ко́мнату* = *you can do the room*; *прибо́ръ* (*m.*) = *cover at table (plate, knife, fork, &c.)*.
- 7 *Пробра́ться* (*pfv.*) = *to make one's way through*; *пробо́ръ* (*m.*) = *parting (on the head)*.

3. *Забравши́сь въ зелёной тростникъ*: XIV А Толбѣ

Разбирáть, разобрáть (разберу́) = *to examine, decipher* ;  
разбо́ръ (*m.*) = *choice, selection, discernment*.

Собира́ть, собра́ть = *to collect* ; собра́ние (*n.*) = *a collection, an assembly, a gathering, a meeting* ; собо́ръ (*m.*) = *a cathedral* ; used reflexively this verb means (besides its literal meaning *to foregather*) *to intend and to intend going* : мы сего́дня собира́емся въ теа́тръ = *we are going to the theatre to-day* ; вы куда́ собира́етесь ? = *where are you off to ?* ; я собира́юсь къ нимъ въ го́сти = *I am going to see them* ; я собира́юсь за гра́ницу = *I intend going abroad* ; мы собра́лись пойти́ = *we had got ready to go (were ready, had decided)* ; мы собира́лись пойти́ = *we had been (were) intending (were preparing) to go*.

Убира́ть, убрáть = *to clear up, away* (— сто́лъ = — *the table, — ко́мнату* = — *the room*) ; уберите́ всё́ эти́ ве́щи = *take away all these things* ; убира́йся (*sing.*), убира́йтесь (*plur.*) = *clear out !* убо́рная (*sc. ко́мната*) = *lavatory, toilet*.

## CHAPTER 54

### COMPOUNDS OF -ИМА́ТЬ AND -ЯТЬ

The verb *взять* is itself a compound of the preposition *воз-* (short form *вз-* = *up*, cf. *R. G.*, p. 231) and *-ять* ; this verb *-ять* never occurs except compounded with a preposition. The present of *-ять* is *-ьмý* (cf. *возьмý*) or *-имý*, the *м* disappearing in the infinitive (and consequently also in the past), according to certain laws of phonetic change which hold good in all the Slavonic languages. All compounds of *-ять*, including *взять*, are *perfective* ; the corresponding *imperfectives* are formed from an infinitive *-имáть*, and are conjugated like *чита́ть*. In the compounds

both of -имать and of -ять the letter н appears between the preposition and the verb ; this is because the prepositions въ and съ originally ended with this letter, which they subsequently lost. Then the verb itself came to assume the form -нимать, -нять, and was compounded in this form with the other prepositions which ended in other consonants or in vowels. In certain cases there are alternative forms without the н when the verb -имать may appear as -ымать. The commonest compounds and cognate words are :

- 1 Внимать (*ipfv.*, cf. *R.G.*, p.155), внять (*pfv.*) = *to hear, attend, listen* (only poetical); вниманіе (*n.*) = *attention*, обратіте (я обращаю) ваше вниманіе на это = *direct (I direct) your attention to this !*; внимательно = *attentively*.
- 2 Вынимать, вынуть (*irregular pfv.*) = *to take out*; я выну (онъ вынетъ) всё изъ чемодана = *I (he) will take everything out of the trunk*; онъ вынулъ деньги изъ кармана = *he took the money out of his pocket*; imperative: вынь, выньте! = *take out!*; надо всё это вынуть отсюда = *(you) must take all this out from this*.
- 3 Занимать, занять (*pres. займѹ*) = *to borrow (money), to occupy*; мы занимаемъ всю квартиру = *we occupy the whole flat*; это васъ занимаетъ? = *does that interest you?*; я займѹ это мѣсто = *I shall occupy this place*; мы заняли эти мѣста = *we have occupied these places*; онъ занялъ (она заняла) у меня деньги = *he (she) borrowed money from me*; всё мѣста заняты = *all the places are taken* (past participle passive); это занятно = *that is interesting*; занятіе (*n.*) = *occupation*; заёмъ (*m.*) = *a loan* (gen. займа, cf. p. 165).
- 4 Нанимать, нанять = *to hire*; нанять намъ извозчика? = *shall we hire a cab?*; я хочу нанять н. = *I want to hire a cab*; наёмъ (*m.*) = *hire*.



- 5 Обнимать, обнять (pres. обниму́, отниму́) = *to embrace, to include*; объятие (n.) = *an embrace*; объём (m.) = *extent, compass, capacity*.
- 6 Отнимать, отнять (pres. отниму́, отниме́ть) = *to take away, carry off*; онъ отнял (она́ отняла́) у меня́ книгу́ = *he (she) took the book away from me (notice the use of y)*.
- 7 Понимать, понять = *to understand* (see next page).
- 8 Поднимать (от подымать), поднять (pres. подниму́, подниме́ть) = *to raise, lift*; used reflexively = *to rise, mount*; подняться по лестницѣ = *to go upstairs*; поднимите, пожалуйста = *lift it up, please*; подъём (m.) = *a lift*.
- 9 Принимать, принять (pres. приму́, приме́ть) = *to receive, accept, take in*; она́ принима́етъ по Воскресѣньямъ = *she is at home on Sundays*; онъ приня́л (она́ приняла́, они́ приняли) моё приглаше́нiе = *he (she, they) has (have) accepted my invitation*; примите мой тёплый (сердечный) привѣтъ = *accept my warm (cordial, affectionate) greeting*; докторъ что вамъ велѣлъ принима́ть? = *what did the doctor order you to take?*; приём (m.) = *reception, at home, manner, way, acceptance (of orders), intake*.
- 10 Снимать, снять (pres. сниму́, сниме́ть) = *to take off clothes, to take photographs*; вы снима́ете? = *do you photograph?*; онъ сня́л (она́ сняла́) свою́ шляпу (свои́ перчатки) = *he (she) took off his (her) hat (gloves)*; (не снимайте) снимите пальто́ = *(don't) take off your overcoat*; снимокъ (m.) = *a photograph, a snapshot*.

## Double compound :

- 11 Предпринимать, предпринять = *to undertake*; предприятие (n.) = *an undertaking, enterprise*; предприимчивый = *enterprising*.

8. Надъ озеромъ поднимал крикъ (утки) XTV A. Tol.  
 8. И жаворонки въ небе уже поднимали трезвонъ XX Tyuch  
 8. И поднимае́тъ къ любви ... очи ... VVV Nadso

## CHAPTER 55

TO UNDERSTAND: ПОНИМАТЬ, ПОНЯТЬ

The commonest of all the compounds of -имать, -ять is the verb meaning *to understand*.

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	понимать	понуимáйт'	понять	понуáйт'
<i>Present</i>	(я) понима́ю	понуима́ю	пойму́	раиму́
	(онъ) понима́етъ	понуима́етъ	<u>поймётъ</u>	раимуётъ
	(они́) понима́ютъ	понуима́ютъ	пойму́тъ	раиму́тъ
<i>Past</i>	(онъ) понима́лъ	понуима́л	пóнялъ	рóнуал
	(она́) etc.		пона́ла	рапуала́
	(они́)		пóняли	рóнуали
<i>Imperative</i>	—	—	пойми́те	раими́те

**Present**

Я ничегó (ни слóва) не понима́ю. Вы понима́ете ?  
*I understand nothing (not a word). Do you understand ?*

Я понима́ю по-нѣмѣцки и по-францúзски.  
*I understand German and French.*

Вы понима́ете по-англíйски и́ли по-италья́нски ?  
*Do you understand English or Italian ?*

**Future (Pfv. ; ipfv. seldom used)**

Я ничегó не пойму́. Васъ (не) пойму́тъ.  
*I shall<sup>1</sup> understand nothing. They will (not) understand you.*

<sup>1</sup> Also = *I cannot*, cf. p. 16.

Не поймётъ и не заметитъ } 7.  
 Гордый взоръ иноплеменный } Тучков. II.  
 Никто меня не понимаетъ: } 80.

**Past** (*Pfv.*; *ipfv.* seldom used)

Вы меня поняли?

*Did you understand me (have you understood me)?*

Я кое-что поняла.

*I understood something here and there.*

Я вас не так поняла.

*I misunderstood you (lit. not thus understood).*

Она меня не так поняла.

*She misunderstood me.*

**Infinitive** (*Pfv.*; *ipfv.* seldom used)

Я не могу вас понять.

*I cannot understand you.*

**Cognate words**

Понятие (*n.*) = *idea, conception*: понятия не имѣю = *I haven't the least idea*; понятно = *it is to be understood, one can understand, it is intelligible.*

Another form of the same word supplies the *perfective* aspect of the verb to catch, which for the sake of reference is here given in full; the *imperfective* aspect is supplied by a different verb.

## CHAPTER 56

### TO CATCH: ЛОВИТЬ, ПОЙМАТЬ

#### *Imperfective*

#### *Perfective*

#### *Infinitive*

ЛОВИТЬ

lavít'

поймáть

raimát'

#### *Present*

(я) ловлю

lavlyú

поймаю

raimáyu

(онъ) ловитъ

lóvit

поймáетъ

raimáyet

(онѣ) ловятъ

lóvyat

поймаютъ

raimáyut

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Past</i>				
(онъ) лови́лъ	lavíl	пойма́лъ	raimál	
(она́) лови́ла	lavíla	пойма́ла	raimála	
(они́) лови́ли	lavílyi	пойма́ли	raimályi	
<i>Imperative</i>				
лови́те	lavítue	пойма́йте	raimáitue	

**Present**

Наша ко́шка уже́ не лови́тъ мышѣй.

*Our cat no longer catches mice.*

**Future (Ipfv.)**

Мы бу́демъ сего́дня лови́тъ ры́бу у́дочкой (sc. уди́тъ).

*We are going to catch fish with a hook to-day (sc. to angle).*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Смотрите́, онъ васъ пойма́етъ !

*Mind (lit. look), he will catch you !*

**Past (Ipfv.)**

Рыбаки́ лови́ли ры́бу не́водомъ.

*The fishermen were catching fish with a net.*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Онъ вчера́ на охотѣ́ пойма́лъ медвѣ́дя.

*He caught a bear yesterday while hunting.*

**Imperative (Pfv. ; ipfv. seldom used)**

Пойма́йте э́ту пти́цу.

*Catch that bird.*

**Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

Ма́льчики пошли́ ры́бу лови́тъ.

*The boys have gone fishing.*

## Infinitive (Pfv.)

Я хочу поймать эту бабочку.

*I want to catch this butterfly.*

In general ловить expresses the process of catching, or the desire or the endeavour to catch; поймать implies actual capture. Наловить is a *perfective* of ловить and means *to catch a quantity*; its *imperfective* is налавливать (cf. p. 37). Улавливать (*ipfv.*) and уловить (*pfv.*) mean figuratively to catch, e.g. *to seize an opportunity* = уловить случай.

Neither of these verbs can be used for the expressions *to catch trains* or *steamers*, for which cf. p. 306, or *to catch cold*, for which cf. p. 285.

## CHAPTER 57

## TO KNOW: ЗНАТЬ, УЗНАТЬ, -ЗНАВАТЬ

## Imperfective

## Perfective

## Infinitive

знать

zna't'

узнать

uzna't'

## Present

(я) знаю

znáyu

узнаю

uznáyu

(онъ) знаетъ

znáyet

узнаетъ

uznáyet

(онѣ) знаютъ

znáyut

узнаютъ

uznáyut

## Past

(онъ) зналъ

znál

узналъ

uznál

## Imperative

знайте

znáitye

узнайте

uznáitye

## Present

Я знаю, что это такъ. Знаете ли вы, гдѣ они?

*I know that this is so. Do you know where they are?*

Богъ его знаетъ! Кто его знаетъ!

*God knows! (lit. it). Who knows (it), who can tell!*

Сли жъ, пока заботѣ не знаеши

V

dermatov

**Future (Ipfv.)**

Онъ навѣрно (вѣроятно) будетъ знать.

*He will certainly (probably) know (sc. can tell you).*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Вы всё это узнаете тамъ (отъ нихъ).

*You will find out all that there (from them).*

Какъ я узнаю объ этомъ ?

*How shall I find out about this ?*

Мои сыновы руки **Past (Ipfv.)** не знаи, что покой  
 Я (не) зналъ объ этомъ. Вы его знали лично? XIX Skishka  
*I did (not) know about that. Did you know him personally?*  
 .. я никогда не знала-ль васъ, " Pushkin. S.  
**Past (Pfv.)**

Я узналъ въ конторѣ о поѣздѣ (о пароходѣ).

*I (have) found out in the office about the train (the steamer).*

Откуда вы узнали все эти подробности ?

*From where did you find out all these details ?*

**Imperative (Pfv. ; ipfv. seldom used)**

Узнайте, можно ли намъ это сдѣлать.

*Find out whether we can do this.*

**Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

Не могу знать.

*I can't tell, I don't know.*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Я (не) могу (хочу ; надо, можно, нельзя) узнатьъ.

*I can(not, want to ; (I) must, one can, one can't) find out.*

**Cognate words**

Знание (n.) = *knowledge.*

The compounds of *знать* (узнатьъ, &c.) are all *perfective*; the corresponding *imperfectives* are formed from a verb *-знавать*, which is conjugated like *-ставать* (cf. p. 129):

- 1 Признавать (pres. признаю), признать = *to admit, recognize (a qualification), own (confess)*; used reflexively it is intransitive: признаться (the infinitive by itself) = *I confess, I admit, honestly*; признание (n.) = *a confession*.
- 2 Сознать (pres. сознаю), сознание = *to be conscious of*; used reflexively = *to own up, to confess*; сознание (n.) = *conscience (= consciousness), confession (conscience, good or bad = совесть, f.)*. *сознательно - consciously.* XII
- 3 Узнавать (pres. узнаю), узнать (pres. узнаю) = *to recognize (faces)*; this узнать is identical in form with узнать = *to ascertain*. Я вас не узнаю = *I don't recognize you*; вы меня не узнаете? = *you don't recognize me?*; вы его не узнаете = *you won't recognize him*.

Самъ узнаешь - будетъ время - брачное житіе. *Ленин*  
 Вы не узнали - бы никогда. *Русский. 8.0*  
 Ты чуть вошёл, я блинъ узнала. " "

## CHAPTER 58

TO MEAN: ЗНАЧИТЬ; TO BECOME ACQUAINTED:  
 ЗНАКОМИТЬСЯ

Infinitive	значить	znachit'	} Imperfective only
Present (это)	значитъ	znáchit	
Past (это)	значило	znáchilo	

This verb is as a rule only used impersonally in Russian:

что это значить? = *what does that mean?*

что это можетъ значить? = *what may that mean?*

это ничего не значить = *that means nothing, that's of no consequence.*

значить, онъ уѣхалъ = *one must suppose (evidently), he has gone away.*

Such expressions as *I mean, what do you mean?* cannot be rendered by this verb, but must be translated by я хочу сказать = *I wish to say, &c.*, cf. pp. 65-67.

Рускай она поплачетъ, сй ничего не значить. III Ленин

## Cognate words

Знакъ (*m.*) = *a sign*; твёрдый знак = ъ ('ерь' or *the hard sign*),  
мѣгкій (myákhki) з. = ь ('ерь' or *the soft sign*).

Значёніе (*n.*) = *meaning, signification*; како́е значёніе имѣеть?  
= *what meaning has it? what is it for?*; ёто не имѣеть ника-  
ко́го значёнія = *that has no meaning, is unimportant*.

Назначать (*ipfv.*), назна́чить (*pfv.*) = *to indicate, destine, appoint*  
назначёніе (*n.*) = *destination, appointment*.

## TO BECOME ACQUAINTED

Познако́миться (*pfv.*; *pres.* познако́млюсь, познако́мится,  
познако́мятся, *past* познако́мился, *imper.* позна-  
ко́мьтесь) = *to become acquainted*.

Without the prefix по- this verb is *imperfective*, and  
without the reflexive pronoun -ся it means *to make*  
*acquainted, to introduce* :

Вы тамъ познако́митесь со мно́гими интере́сными и  
у́мными людьми́.

*You will get to know a lot of interesting and clever people*  
*there.*

Гдѣ вы съ ней (съ нимъ, съ ними) познако́мились?  
*Where did you get to know her (him, them)?*

Я васъ познако́млю съ ней, ёсли хотíte.  
*I will introduce you to her, if you wish.*

Почему́ вы меня́ съ нимъ не познако́мили?  
*Why didn't you introduce me to him?*

Эта́ кни́га познако́митъ васъ съ ру́сской жи́знью.  
*This book will introduce you to Russian life.*

## Cognate words

Знако́мый (*m.*), знако́мая (*f.*) = *an acquaintance (a person)*;  
знако́мый (*adj.*) = *familiar (famous = изве́стный, знаме-  
ни́тый*; вѣдать is an obsolete verb = *to know*).



## CHAPTER 59

TO KNOW HOW : УМѢТЬ, СУМѢТЬ

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	умѢТЬ	умуѣѣт'	сумѢТЬ	сумуѣѣт'
<i>Present</i>	(я) умѢЮ	умуѣуу	сумѢЮ	сумуѣуу
	(онѢ) умѢЕТЬ	умуѣует	сумѢЕТЬ	сумуѣует
	(онѢ) умѢЮТЪ	умуѣуут	сумѢЮТЪ	сумуѣуут
<i>Past</i>	(онѢ) умѢЛЪ	умуѣ <sup>а</sup> л	сумѢЛЪ	сумуѣ <sup>а</sup> л

This verb is derived from умъ (*m.*) = *mind*, and its conjugation is the same as that of many other verbs in -ѢТЬ derived from adjectives and denoting processes (cf. p. 40). The perfective сумѢТЬ is formed by the addition of the preposition съ, which merely makes the *imperfective* verb *perfective* and has no particular meaning of its own. The ѣ is omitted, as usual, in cases where the verb begins with a hard vowel and the preposition ends in a consonant, but the verb is occasionally written съумѢТЬ.

The use of this verb is extremely common, often taking the place of мочь (cf. p. 57), especially in its *perfective* form, which supplies the future : *I shall be able, I shall manage*, though when it is a question of *time*, успѣТЬ is used, cf. p. 305.

**Present**

Я умѢЮ читАТЬ по-руССки, но не умѢЮ говорИТЬ.  
*I can read Russian, but cannot talk (it).*

Вы умѣете (sc. говорѣть) по-англійски ?  
*Can you speak English* (говорѣть is often omitted).

Онъ не умѣетъ говорѣть ни на какомъ иностранномъ  
 языкѣ (nom. языкъ, m. = *language*).  
*He cannot talk any foreign language.*

Онъ хорошо умѣетъ снимать фотографіи, но не умѣетъ  
 ихъ самъ проявлять.  
*He knows how (can) to take photographs well, but cannot  
 develop them himself.*

Этотъ мальчикъ умѣетъ читать, писать, рисовать, пѣть  
 и играть на роялѣ (nom. рояль, m. = *a piano*).  
*This boy can read, write (писать can also mean to paint),  
 draw, sing, and play the piano.*

#### Future (*Pfv.* ; *ipfv.* not used)

Вы сумѣете это сдѣлать ? Сумѣю !  
*Shall you be able to do this (sc. manage this) ? I shall !*

Я не сумѣю найти дорогу туда одинъ (одна).  
*I shan't be able to find the way there alone (fem.).*

Я не сумѣю объяснить ему ; — объяснить себя.  
*I shan't be able to explain to him ; — to explain myself.*

#### Past (*Ipfv.*)

Она не умѣла ни читать ни писать.  
*She could neither read nor write.*

#### Past (*Pfv.*)

Я сумѣлъ ему кое-какъ объяснить.  
*I managed somehow or other to explain to him.*

## Cognate words

Умъ (m.) = *mind*; умный = *clever*; умница (m. or f.) = *a clever fellow, a clever girl*.

Разумъ (m.) = *intellect*; разумный = *sensible, possessed of common sense*; разумѣтся = *of course* (lit. *that understands itself*); само собою разумѣтся = *that is understood, taken for granted*; подразумевается = *is understood to mean, to indicate, to include*.

Недоумѣние (n.) = *hesitation*; недоумѣвать = *to hesitate*.

Недоразумѣние (n.) = *a misunderstanding*.

## CHAPTER 60

## TO GIVE: ДАВАТЬ, ДАТЬ.

This verb in its *imperfective* aspect follows -ставать, -знавать (cf. pp. 129, 174), and in its *perfective* aspect is one of the so-called 'irregular' verbs; it is given here in full:

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	давать	davát'	дать	dát'
<i>Present</i>				
(я) даю	dayú	дамъ	dam	
(ты) даёшь	dayósh	дашь	dash	
(онъ) даётъ	dayót	дасть	dast	
(мы) даёмъ	dayóm	дадимъ	dadyím	
(вы) даёте	dayótye	дадите	dadyítYe	
(они) даютъ	dayút	дадутъ	dadút	
<i>Past</i>				
(онъ) давалъ	davál	далъ	dal	
(она) давала	davála	дала	dalá	
(они) давали	davályi	дали	dályi	
<i>Imperative</i>				
давай	davái	дай	dái	
давайте	daváitYe	дайте	dáitYe	

« Дай<sup>N 2</sup> тебе я на дорожку образокъ свѣ<sup>2</sup>тѣ мой. " V. Lermontov

		<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Indeclinable Participles</i>	<i>Present</i>	давая	dayaya	—	—
	<i>Past</i>	дававъ	dayaf	давъ	daf
<i>Participles Active</i>	<i>Present</i>	дающій	dayushchi	—	—
	<i>Past</i>	дававший <sup>1</sup>	dayafshy <sup>1</sup>	давший <sup>1</sup>	dafshy <sup>1</sup>
<i>Participles Passive</i>	<i>Present</i>	даваемый	dayayemy	—	—
	<i>Past</i>				

Онъ тебѣ любовь данъ. данный danny  
VII Пушкин

### Present

Даю вамъ честное слово. Онъ даётъ мнѣ деньги.  
*I give you my word of honour. He gives me (the) money.*

Она даётъ уроки русскаго языка.  
*She gives Russian lessons.*

Сколько вы ему даёте? Корова даётъ молоко.  
*How much do you give him? The cow gives milk.*

Онѣ сегодня дають обѣдъ (вѣчеръ, балъ, спектакль).  
*To-day they are giving a dinner (an evening party, a ball, theatricals).*

Сегодня дають Евгенія Онѣгина <sup>2</sup> въ театрѣ.  
*To-day they are giving Eugen Onégin <sup>2</sup> at the theatre.*

<sup>1</sup> и after ш = ы (y), cf. p. 2.

<sup>2</sup> An opera by Chaikóvski, the libretto being taken from Púshkin's great novel in verse of this name.

**Future (Ipfv.)**

Я б́уду (кто б́удеть) дава́ть вамъ уро́ки (?)

*I am going (who is going) to give you lessons (?)*

Ско́лько (жа́лованья) вы б́удете ему́ (е́й) дава́ть ?

*How much (wages) are you going to give him (her) ?*

За́втра днѣмъ б́удутъ дава́ть Шекспи́ра, а ве́черомъ Че́хова.

*To-morrow afternoon they will play Shakespeare and in the evening Chekhov.*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Я вамъ бо́льше (де́негъ) не дамъ. Дамъ де́ньги.

*I won't give you any more (money). I will give you the money.*

Ско́лько за э́то дади́те ? Бо́льше рубля́<sup>1</sup> не дамъ.

*How much will you give for that ? Not more than a rouble.*

Я вамъ дамъ па́спортъ, биле́тъ, ключи́, нача́й.<sup>2</sup>

*I will give you (my) passport, ticket, keys, a remuneration.*

Я вамъ дамъ всё что (ог ско́лько) вы хоти́те.

*I will give you everything (or as much as) you want.*

Они́ вамъ не даду́тъ разрѣше́нiя (позволе́нiя).

*They won't give you permission.*

**Past (Ipfv.)**

Пре́жде ча́сто дава́ли э́ту пьѣсу (о́перу).

*Formerly they often used to give this play (opera).*

Вчера́ дава́ли комеди́ю Остро́вскаго.<sup>3</sup>

*Yesterday they gave a comedy of Ostrovski.<sup>3</sup>*

<sup>1</sup> Genitive of comparison.

<sup>2</sup> 'for tea'—a euphemism.

<sup>3</sup> A famous Russian playwright.

## Past (Pfv.)

Скóлько вы е́му да́ли ? Я е́му да́ль полти́ну.

*How much did you give him ? I gave him half a rouble.*

Она́ е́му да́ла рубль съ полти́ной (ог рубль пятьдеся́тъ).

*She gave him a rouble and a half (or one-fifty).*

Вы да́ли е́му что́-нибудь ? Да́ль (да́ла).

*Did you give (have you given) him anything ? I have.*

Вы мнѣ да́ли ма́ло, мно́го ;—ли́шнее.

*You have given me little (sc. not enough), much (sc. too much);  
— extra.*

Я вамъ уже́ дово́льно да́ль. Вы да́ли е́му зна́ть ?

*I have already given you enough. Have you let him know ?*

Она́ мнѣ да́ла разрѣше́нiе. Онъ да́ль обѣща́нiе.

*She has given me (her) permission. He gave (his) promise.*

When negatived the word *не* withdraws the accent on to itself from this part of the verb in the *masculine* and *plural* :

Я е́му ещё́ не́-да́ль ниче́го. Она́ ниче́го не да́ла.

*I have not yet given him anything. She gave nothing.*

Вы мнѣ ещё́ не́-дали́ де́негъ.

*You have not yet given me the money (any money).*

Мнѣ не́-дали́ зна́ть. Е́му не́-дали́ гово́рить.

*They never let me know. They wouldn't let him speak.*

## Imperative (Ipfv.)

Дава́йте играти́ въ ка́рты, въ ша́хматы, въ ша́шки, въ жму́рки, въ снѣжки́, въ горѣ́лки.

*Let's play (have a game of) cards, chess, draughts, blind man's buff, snowball, catch-as-catch-can.*

Дава́йте вы́пьемъ что́-нибудь. Дава́й(те) !

*Let us have a drink of something. By all means !*

Не да́вайте ему́ бо́льше (сто́лько ог такъ мно́го).

*Don't give him any more (so much).*

Не да́вайте ему́ пройт́и.

*Don't let him go through (or past).*

### Imperative (Pfv.)

Да́йте мнѣ, пожа́луйста, что́-нибудь поѣсть.

*Please give me (let me have) something to eat.*

Да́йте мнѣ (ещѣ) немно́жко (ог немно́жечко) сѹпу, икры, хлѣ́ба, ры́бы, мя́са, карто́феля, пирога́, сла́дкаго, сы́ру, ма́сла, молока́, сли́вокъ ;—(ещѣ) нѣско́лько пирожко́въ, бу́локъ, блино́въ, грибо́въ.

*Give me a little (more) soup, caviar, bread, fish, meat, potato, pie, sweet, cheese, butter, milk, cream ;—a few (more) little pies, little loaves, pancakes, mushrooms.*

Да́йте мнѣ говори́ть. Да́йте ему́ знат́ь.

*Let me speak. Let him know.*

*"Дай вамъ Богъ  
God grant you.  
Всѣмъ вамъ да  
всѣмъ вамъ да"*

### Infinitive (Ipfv.)

Не на́до дава́ть бо́льше (сто́лько, такъ мно́го).

*(You) mustn't give more (so much).*

### Infinitive (Pfv.)

Прошу́ васъ да́ть мнѣ бутылку вина́ (пи́ва).

*Please give me a bottle of wine (beer).*

Я (не) могу́ (не хоч́у) вамъ да́ть это́.

*I can(not) (don't want to) give you this.*

### Cognate words and common compound verbs

Да́нь (*f.*) = *tribute* ; да́ча (*f.*) = *a country villa*.

Зада́ча (*f.*) = *a problem*.

1. Издава́ть (*ipfv.*), изда́ть (*pfv.*) = *to give forth, edit, publish* ; изда́ние (*n.*) = *edition* ; книгоизда́тельство (*n.*) = *publishing firm*.

• и ты (тѹга) издавала тайнственный грѹмъ  
XVII Pushkin.

- 2 Отдавать, отдать = *to give away, give back, give up*; онъ вамъ отдалъ (note the accent) деньги? = *did he repay you the money?* она мнѣ отдала книгу = *she gave me back (or let me have) the book*, отдали мальчика въ школу = *they sent the boy to school*. "Ему жизнь отдала!" Колтсов. 1X
- 3 Передавать, передать = *to hand over, pass*; передайте ему отъ меня дружескій привѣтъ = *hand him (sc. convey) a friendly greeting from me*; будьте такъ добры передать мнѣ меню (табльдота), преискурантъ, соль, перецъ, горчицу, хлѣбъ, воду = *be so good as to hand me the menu (of the table-d' hote), the bill of fare, the salt, the pepper, the mustard, the bread, the water*. Cf. also p. 272.

- 4 Подавать, подать = *to serve (a meal), to bring up (carriage or horses)*; подавайте обѣдъ (лошадѣй) = *serve the dinner (bring round the horses)*; подали обѣдъ? = *have they served dinner (is dinner ready)?* обѣдъ (чай, завтракъ, ужинъ) поданъ = *dinner (tea, lunch, supper) is served*; подать (f.) = *tax*.

Подданный (-ая) = *the subject of a state*.

Прѣданный (-ая) = *devoted*; вашъ прѣданный другъ (слуга) = *your devoted (humble) friend (servant)*.

Приданое (n.) = *dowry, trousseau*.

- 5 Продавать, продать = *to sell*; for examples cf. p. 204.

6 Раздавать, раздать = *to distribute, deal out*; often used reflexively = *to resound*. "Въ думѣ твоей голосъ раздавался".

- 7 Сдавать, сдать = *to deliver*; с. багажъ = *to hand over heavy luggage for weighing and labelling*, с. экзамень = *to go in for an exam.* (сдавать э. = *to go in for —*, сдать э. = *to pass*), с. карты = *to deal cards*; сдача (f.) = *change (money left over)*.

- 8 Удаваться, удался, always in the 3rd person = *to succeed, have success*; мнѣ не удалось это сдѣлать = *I did not succeed in doing this, I couldn't manage it*; удача (f.) = *success, удачный = successful*.

Double compounds :

- 9 Преподавать (only *ipfv.*) = *to teach (a subject)*; кто тамъ преподаётъ русскій языкъ? *who teaches Russian there?* преподаватель (m.) = *teacher, instructor, lecturer*.

- 10 Распродавать, распродать = *to sell off*, cf. p. 205.

- 11 Создавать, создать = *to create*.

Родкой опять раздается звукъ XI Lemaitre  
 Нотъ, никому ещё не удавалось! XII Гундов.



To give = to make a gift or present is (*ipfv.*) дарить, (*pfv.*) подарить.

Я вамъ подарю́ эту вещь. Подарите́ мнѣ́ это́ !

I will make you a present of this thing. Give me that (to keep) !

Онъ (она́, они́) мнѣ́ подарилъ (подари́ла, подарилы) все́ эти́ вещи́ (де́ньги, кни́ги).

He (she, they) gave me all these things (money, books).

Подарокъ (*m.*) = a gift, plur. подарки.

## CHAPTER 61

TO SAY, TO TELL, TO SPEAK, TO TALK : ГОВОРИТЬ,  
СКАЗАТЬ

The two aspects of this verb are, like those of класть and положить (cf. p. 149) and of брать and взять (cf. p. 163), supplied by two different verbs :

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	говорить	gavarít'	сказать	skazá't'
<i>Present</i>	(я) говорю́	gavaryú	скажу́	skazhú
	(онъ) говоритъ	gavarít	скажетъ	skázhet
	(они́) говорятъ	gavaryát	скажутъ	skázhut
<i>Past</i>	(онъ) говорилъ	gavaríl	сказалъ	skazál
<i>Imperative</i>	говорите	gavarít'ye	скажи́те	skazhýt'ye

There is another *perfective* formed from говорить, which is less commonly used, viz. поговорить ; it means to have

a chat, talk for a short time. Сказáть never means to speak or talk.

### Present

Что вы говорíte?—Что вы говорíte!

*What do you say? (I beg your pardon?)—You don't mean it!*

Я не понимаю, чтò вы говорíte.

*I don't understand what you say (when что = what, the relative pronoun, and not that, the conjunction, it is often accented in Russian print).*

Мнѣ не понятно, когдá вы говорíte такъ скóро.

*I don't understand (lit. it is not intelligible to me) when you speak so quickly.*

Вы говорíte по-пóльски, по-сéрбски, по-чéшски, по-болгáрски, по-грéчески, по-венгéрски, по-турéцки, по-румýнски, по-дáтски, по-швéдски, по-голлáндски, по-литóвски, по-лотýшски, по-чухóнски, по-татáрски?

*Do you speak Polish, Serbian, Bohemian, Bulgarian, Greek, Hungarian, Turkish, Rumanian, Danish, Swedish, Dutch, Lithuanian, Lettish, Finnish, Tartar?*

Здѣсь говорáтъ по-áнглійски, по-францýзски, по-нѣмéцки.  
*English, French, German spoken here.*

Говорáтъ, что онъ óчень способный человекъ.

*They say that he is a very capable man.*

Говорáтъ, бýдто она́ обруч́илась (онъ обруч́ился).

*There is a report (lit. they say as though) she (he) is betrothed.*

Онъ мнѣ говор́ить, что (не) стóитъ смотр́ть.

*He tells me that it is (not) worth seeing (e.g. a play).*

Я вамъ говорю́, что вы ошибáетесь.

*I tell you that you are mistaken.*

“Но, говорятъ, вы не любили;” Пушкин. Э. О.

Это (не) говорится, такъ (не) говорятъ.

*That is (not) said, they (do not) say so (e.g. a phrase).*

In colloquial narration, where the word *говорить* is frequently repeated, it often sounds like: *gat* (a as in *paternal*).

### Future (*Ipfv.*)

На какомъ языкѣ будутъ тамъ говорить ?

*In what language will they speak there ?*

Если вы будете скоро говорить, я ничего не пойму.

*If you are going to talk quickly I shall understand nothing.*

Мы объ этомъ (лучше) не будемъ говорить.

*We will (rather) not talk about that.*

Онъ будетъ говорить ; . . . говорить рѣчь.

*He is going to speak ; . . . to make a speech.*

### Future (*Pfv.*)

Онъ скажетъ вамъ какъ надо туда пойти.

*He will tell you how to find your way (go) there.*

Я вамъ скажу все подробности потомъ.

*I will tell you all the details later.*

Никто вамъ ничего (ни слова) не скажетъ.

*No one will say anything (a word) to you.*

Вто что я вамъ скажу. Почему вы не скажете ?

*This is what I will tell you. Why won't you tell (me) ?*

The present of *сказать* can never mean *I will speak*.

Я съ нимъ поговорю

*I will speak to (lit. with) him, will have a talk with him.*

### Past (*Ipfv.*)

Я часто говорилъ ему (огъ съ нимъ) объ этомъ.

*I often spoke (or used to speak) to him (or with him) about this.*

*и ласкалась говорила: VII Pushkin.*

Вы говорѣли ему? Она вамъ говорила?

*Did you tell him? Did she tell you?*

Онъ говорилъ мнѣ. Она мнѣ не говорила.

*He was telling me. She never told me.*

× The *imperfective* past is often used when one would rather expect the *perfective*. Говорѣлъ may be said to be less categorical than сказалъ. It *must* be used after such words as *часто* (*often*), *долго* (*for long*), *прежде* (*formerly*), *когда-нибудь* (*ever*).

**Past (Pfv.)**

Кто вамъ это сказалъ? Она мнѣ сказала сама.

*Who told you this? She told me herself.*

Я ничего не сказалъ. Вы сказали имъ?

*I said nothing. Have you told them?*

Что вы сказали?

*What did you say (I beg your pardon)?*

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Говорите! Не говорите ему! Не говорите ничего.

*Speak! Don't tell him! Say nothing.*

Говорите медленно, тише; не г. такъ скоро.

*Speak slowly, slower (also = lower); don't talk so fast.*

Не говоримъ. Теперь говоримъ по-русски.

*Don't let us say, talk, speak, tell. Now let us talk Russian.*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Пожалуйста, скажите мнѣ какой это домъ (какая это улица, церковь, станція, рѣка; какое это зданіе, село, мѣсто)?

*Please tell me what house this is (what street, church, station, river; what building, village, place)? For what is the name of, is called, cf. p. 265.*

Скажіте, пожа́луйста ! (Secondary meaning).

*Well I never, go on, fancy that, you don't mean it !*

Ска́жемъ. Погoворимъ.

*Let us say. Let's have a chat.*

### Infinitive (Ipfv.)

Я не могу́ говоритъ, у меня́ простуда и кашель

*I can't talk, I have a bad cold and a cough.*

Я не могу́ (не хочу́) говоритъ объ́ этомъ.

*I can't (don't wish) to talk about that.*

Я умѣю говоритъ по-ру́сски, то́лько немно́го.

*I can talk (speak) Russian, but only a little.*

### Infinitive (Pfv.)

Можете ли вы мнѣ сказа́тъ, какъ мнѣ на́до пойти́ въ  
(такое-то мѣсто, зданіе), на (такой-то вокзалъ, на  
такую-то улицу, площадь)?

*Can you tell me how I am to get to (such and such a place,  
building), to (such and such a terminus, such and such  
a street, square) ?*

Я (не) могу́ вамъ сказа́тъ. Трудно сказа́тъ

*I can(not) tell you. It is difficult to say (tell).*

Можно сказа́тъ. Это́ можно сказа́тъ ? Такъ сказа́тъ.

*One may (can) say. Can one say that ? So to say.*

Нельзя́ сказа́тъ. Какъ сказа́тъ это́ по-ру́сски ?

*One can't say (tell). How does one say that in Russian ?*

Я хочу́ съ ва́ми поговоритъ.

*I want to have a talk with you.*

*Какъ будто́ хотеть оиъ сказа́тъ: - XX Tolstoy*

## Cognate words

Говоръ (*m.*)=*talking, dialect*; скороговорка (*f.*)=*a catch, patter*; поговорка (*f.*)=*a saying*. Сказка (*f.*)=*a tale*.

The compounds of these two verbs fall into two categories, those formed from говорить, and those derived from the root contained in сказать.

Compounds of говорить are *perfective*; the corresponding *imperfectives* have the form -говаривать, conjugated like думать. Some of the commonest are:

- 1 Выговаривать, выговорить = *to utter, pronounce*; выговоръ (*m.*) = *pronunciation*; а scolding.
- Договоръ (*m.*)=*a treaty*.
- 2 Заговаривать, заговорить = *to start talking, to exorcise*; заговоръ (*m.*)=*a conspiracy*.
- 3 Оговориться (*pfv.*)=*to make a reservation*.
- 4 Отговаривать (*ipfv.*)=*(to try) to dissuade*; отговорить (*pfv.*)=*to succeed in dissuading*; отговорка (*f.*)=*an excuse*.
- Переговоръ (*m.*)=*conference*; (*pl.*)=*negotiations*.
- 5 Подговаривать, подговорить = *to instigate*.
- 6 Приговаривать (*ipfv.*)=*to keep on saying, to keep up a refrain*; приговорить (*pfv.*)=*to condemn*; приговоръ (*m.*)=*a sentence, judgement, decree*.
- 7 Проговорить (*pfv.*) is often used in books in its past tense as an alternative of сказалъ; промолвилъ is another alternative; used reflexively проговориться = *to say something one didn't mean to say*.
- 8 Разговаривать (*ipfv.*)=*to converse*; разговоръ (*m.*)=*a conversation*; разговорчивый = *talkative*.
- 9 Сговориться (*pfv.*)=*to come to an understanding*.
- 10 Уговаривать (*ipfv.*)=*(to try) to persuade*, уговорить (*pfv.*)=*to succeed in persuading* (cf. p. 5); уговоръ (*m.*)=*a stipulation*.

во (ш) гласить (-ашу - ашутъ) и.а. imp воз-т.  
 & announce, proclaim.

"онъ гласитъ во весь концы" Тучев. I

7. Сознательно она проговорила. Тучев.  
 (articulate, - with difficulty).

## CHAPTER 62

## COMPOUNDS OF -КАЗАТЬ (TO SHOW)

The verb *сказать* is itself a compound of the preposition *съ* and the verb *-казать* ; this verb never occurs in its simple form (i.e. without a preposition) except as a reflexive.

The primary meaning of *-казать* is

## TO SHOW

In its simple form it appears in the reflexive verb *казаться*, which means *to seem* and is most commonly used impersonally :

<i>Present</i>	ка́жется	kázhets(y)a
<i>Past</i>	казáлось	kazálos'
<i>[Imperative</i>	кажи́сь	kazhýs']

This word, *ка́жется*, which literally means *it seems*, is the equivalent for the English *I think, I fancy, I have an idea, I believe, apparently*.

**Present**

Ка́жется, онъ уже у́ехалъ. Мнѣ такъ ка́жется.

*I fancy he has already left. I think so, I believe so.*

Э́то вамъ ка́жется до́рого ? Какъ вамъ ка́жется ?

*Do you think that is dear ? What do you think about it ?*

Ка́жется, что нѣтъ. Ка́жется хва́тить.

*I fancy not. I think that (there) will be enough.*

**Past**

Мнѣ казáлось, что онъ сегодня не въ ду́хѣ.

*I had an idea (I fancied) he was not in a good mood to-day.*

The *perfective* form of the past is also often used with

1. *Мнѣ кажется всё такъ знако́мо, 21 Tolstoi*

almost identical meaning as the *imperfective*; both *perfective* and *imperfective* can of course be used in any person and either number :

Онъ мнѣ (по)казáлся. Она́ ему́ (по)казáлась.

*He seemed to me. She seemed to him.*

Э́то имъ (по)казáлось. Онѣ́ намъ (по)казáлись.

*This seemed to them. They seemed to us.*

### Imperative

Кажѣсь.

*It appears, one would say, one would think.*

All the compounds of -казáть, like the verb сказа́ть, are *perfective*; their corresponding *imperfectives* appear in the form -ка́зывать, and are all conjugated like ду́мать. The commonest are :

1. Дока́зывать (*ipfv.*), доказа́ть (*pfv.*) = *to prove* (transitive); дока́зательство (*n.*) = *a proof*.
2. Зака́зывать, заказа́ть = *to order* (clothes, food, &c.): вы уже заказа́ли? = *have you already ordered* (sc. *your food*)?, я ещё не заказа́лъ = *I have not yet ordered*; заказа́ть (*m.*) = *an order*; заказа́нное письмо́ = *a registered letter*.
3. Нака́зывать, наказа́ть = *to punish*; наказа́ние (*n.*) = *punishment*.
4. Ока́зывать, оказа́ть (о = объ) = *to show, evince*; used reflexively = *to appear, to turn out (to be)*: оказа́вается, что можно́ (нельзя́) = *it appears that (after all) one can (can't)*, оказа́лось (не)возмо́жнымъ = *it turned to be (im)possible*.
5. Отка́зывать, отказа́ть = *to refuse*, more usually as a reflexive: я отказа́лся = *I have refused*, я отка́зываюсь = *I refuse*; *to refuse an invitation* = отказа́ться; отка́зъ (*m.*) = *a refusal*.

Теперь я знаю въ вашей воле меня презреть или наказати

Рибен. E.O.



- 6 Показывать, показать = *to show* : онъ мнѣ показываетъ какъ это надо сдѣлать = *he is showing me how this is done*, я вамъ покажy книги = *I will show you the books*, вы мнѣ покажете дорогу? = *will you show me the way?*, что они вамъ показали? = *what did they show you?*, мнѣ ничего не показывали = *they didn't show me anything*, не показывайте ему = *don't show him*, покажите мнѣ = *show me*, можете показатъ мнѣ? = *can you show me?*
7. Приказывать, приказатъ = *to order, command* : что прикажете? = *what shall you command?* (sc. *wish*, the usual question in shops and restaurants); онъ приказалъ вамъ кланяться = *he commanded (me) to greet you* (sc. *wished to be kindly remembered to you*); приказчикъ (or прикащикъ) = *a shop-attendant*; приказаніе (n.) = *an order, command*.
- 8 [Сказывать (*ipfv.* of сказать) = *to relate.*]
- 9 Указывать, указатъ = *to point out*; указъ (m.) = *an imperial decree*; указатель (m.) = *a guide-book, time-table*.

Compounds of сказать :

- 0 Предсказывать, предсказать = *to foretell*.
11. Рассказывать, рассказать = *to relate, narrate* : расскажите мнѣ объ этомъ = *tell me about that*, онъ намъ рассказываетъ про свою поѣздку = *he is telling us about his journey*, ну, рассказывай! = *what nonsense, go on!* рассказъ = *a tale, a short story*.

"Стать сказывать я сказки" *derivative of V*  
 Сказати по правдѣ, *derivative of III*  
 Ты Расскажи всю правду ей, " "

## CHAPTER 63

TO EAT : ЪСТЬ, СЪЪСТЬ

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	ЪСТЬ	yé'st'	СЪЪСТЬ	syé'st'
<i>Present</i>	(Я) ЪМЪ	yé'am	СЪЪМЪ	syé'am
	(ТЫ) ЪШЬ	yé'sh	СЪЪШЬ	syé'sh
	(ОНЪ) ЪСТЬ	yé'st	СЪЪСТЬ	syé'st
	(МЫ) ЪДИМЪ	yedyím	СЪЪДИМЪ	s(y)edyím
	(ВЫ) ЪДИТЕ	yedyítYe	СЪЪДИТЕ	s(y)edyítYe
	(ОНИ) ЪДЯТЬ	yedyát	СЪЪДЯТЬ	s(y)edyát
<i>Past</i>	(ОНЪ) ЪЛЪ	yé'l	СЪЪЛЪ	syé'l
	(ОНИ) ЪЛИ	yé'lyi	СЪЪЛИ	syé'lyi
<i>Imperative (irregular)</i>	ЪШЬ	yé'sh	СЪЪШЬ	syé'sh
	ЪШЬТЕ	yé'shtye	СЪЪШЬТЕ	syé'shtye

This is one of the so-called 'irregular' verbs. ЪСТЬ means *to eat habitually* or *to be actually eating*; СЪЪСТЬ = *to eat up*. There is another *perfective*, viz. поѪСТЬ, which means *to eat a little of anything*. There are other *imperfectives*, ѪДАТЬ (seldom used), and СЪЪДАТЬ, which means *to eat up habitually*.

The verb ЪСТЬ and its derivatives is used in Russian always when referring to the 1st and 3rd persons both singular and plural. The 2nd person singular and plural is also used in intimate conversation and the home circle,

but amongst friends and acquaintances another verb is commonly used in addressing one another, being considered more polite. This verb is (*ipfv.*) кѹшать, (*pfv.*) скѹшать or покѹшать (literally = *to taste*), which is conjugated like дѹмать, cf. p. 22 ; it is also used for politeness' sake by servants for the 1st and 3rd persons.

### Present

Я ѣмъ очень много фруктъ и конфѣтъ.  
*I eat a great deal of fruit and a lot of sweets.*

Онъ ѣсть супъ, а мы ѣдимъ рыбу.  
*He is eating soup, but we are eating fish.*

Мы ѹтромъ мяса не ѣдимъ.  
*We don't eat meat in the morning.*

Вы очень мало кѹшаете (ѣдите).  
*You are eating very little.*

Въ Англіи копченѹга мяса не ѣдятъ.  
*In England people don't eat smoked meat.*

### Future (*Pfv.*)

Что вы бѹдете ѣсть (кѹшать) ?  
*What are you going to eat ?*

Я ѹтого блюда не бѹду ѣсть.  
*I shall not eat any of this dish.*

### Future (*Ipfv.*)

Я съѣмъ цѣлаго цыплѣнка, я проголодался.  
*I shall (sc. can) eat a whole chicken, I am very hungry.*

Онъ всего ѹтого не съѣсть.  
*He won't eat all this.*

Я поѣмъ немножко хлѣба съ масломъ.  
*I shall have a little bread and butter to eat.*

Вы поку́шаете ещё немно́жко э́того блю́да ?  
*Will you eat a little more of this dish ?*

Вы ску́шаете ещё что́-нибудь ?  
*Will you eat anything more ?*

Я съ удово́льствиемъ съѣмъ ещё кусо́къ пиро́жного.  
*I shall with pleasure eat another piece of cake.*

#### Past (Ipfv.)

Я никогда́ не ѣлъ такі́хъ вку́сныхъ грибо́въ.  
*I have never eaten such nice mushrooms.*

Лѣтомъ мы ѣли ка́ждый день моро́женого.  
*In the summer we ate ices every day.*

Мы ещё ѣли обѣ́дь, когда́ по́ѣздъ уше́лъ.  
*We were still eating dinner when the train went off.*

Въ А́нглии мы ѣли я́йца съ ветчи́ной за ча́емъ у́тромъ.  
*In England we used to eat eggs and ham (sc. bacon) at tea in  
 the morning (sc. breakfast).*

Вы ѣ́дали блино́въ съ икро́й и сметано́й ?  
*Have you ever eaten pancakes with caviar and sour cream ?*

Нѣ́тъ, не ѣ́далъ. Ё́далъ.  
*No, I have never (eaten). I have (eaten some time).*

#### Past (Pfv.)

Мы за обѣ́домъ съѣ́ли цѣ́лаго поро́сёнка.  
*At dinner we ate a whole sucking-pig.*

Онъ на э́томъ соба́ку съѣ́лъ, и мо́ской закусе́лъ.  
*He has eaten a dog on that, and tasted lap-dog (proverb  
 meaning he knows all about that).*

#### Imperative (Ipfv.)

‘Хлѣ́ба ѣшь, а пра́вду рѣ́жь.’

‘*Eat bread, and cut (sc. speak) the truth*’ (proverb).

‘ Ъшь пирогъ съ гриба́ми, а держи́ язы́къ за зубáми.’

‘ *Eat your mushroom-pie, and keep your tongue behind your teeth* ’ (proverb = *mind your own business, and don't let on*).

Не кúшайте бóльше, ёсли вамъ ёто не по вку́су.

*Don't eat any more, if it's not to your taste.*

### Imperative (Pfv.)

Поку́шайте ещё что́-нибудь !

*Have something more to eat !*

Ску́шайте ещё кусо́къ ётого пирога́.

*Have another piece of this pie.*

### Infinitive (Ipfv.)

Мнѣ ужáсно хóчется ѣсть (от Я гóлодень, fem. голоднá, pl. гóлодны).

*I am awfully hungry (I am hungry).*

Мнѣ нездорóвится, я ничегó не могу́ ѣсть.

*I am not well, I can't eat anything.*

Я ужé не хочú ѣсть, я совсѣмъ сытъ (fem. сытá, pl. сыты).

*I am no longer hungry, I am quite satisfied.*

Пожа́луйте кúшать ! Кúшать гото́во !

*The meal is served (ready) !*

### Infinitive (Pfv.)

Я хочú что́-нибудь (ещё) поѣсть.

*I want something (more) to eat.*

Я не могу́ всегó ётого съѣсть.

*I can't eat all that.*

## Cognate and other words

Ѣда́ (*f.*)=*food, victuals*, за ѣдой=*at meal-time*; ку́шанье (*n.*)=*a dish (food)*; блюдо́ (*n.*)=*a dish (utensil or food)*; обѣ́дь (*m.*)=*dinner*, обѣ́дать (*ipfv.*)=*to dine*; у́жинъ (*m.*)=*supper*, у́жинать (*ipfv.*)=*to sup*; за́втракъ (*m.*)=*lunch*, за́втракать (*ipfv.*)=*to lunch*; закусѣ́ть (*pfv.*)=*to have a bite, a snack* (заку́ска, *f.*=*hors d'oeuvres*).

In Russia dinner, the principal meal, may be in the middle of the day, in the afternoon, or in the evening, so that the names of the other meals are not always applicable. There is no word for *breakfast*, and this is rendered by чай or кофе́.

The present of обѣ́дать, &c., is often used for the future, as in English, e.g.

Я за́втра обѣ́даю у Смирно́выхъ.

*I am dining at the Smirnovs' to-morrow.*

The *perfective* verbs пообѣ́дать<sup>1</sup>, позавтра́кать, поужина́ть are also used in such phrases as :

Мы сперва́ пообѣ́даемъ, а пото́мъ поѣ́демъ.

*We shall first have dinner, and then we shall start.*

Они́ пригласи́ли меня́ позавтра́кать у нихъ.

*They have invited me to lunch with them.*

Я приглашу́ его́ пообѣ́дать у насъ за́втра.

*I shall invite him to dine with us to-morrow.*

Поужина́емъ се́годня ве́черомъ въ рестора́нѣ.

*Let us have supper this evening in a restaurant.*

*To prepare food, to cook*=гото́вить (*ipfv.*), *pres.* гото́влю, cf. p. 25.

*To boil*=вари́ть (*ipfv.*), сварѣ́ть (*pfv.*); по́варъ=*a chef*.

*To bake*=печь (пеку́, печѣ́тъ, *ipfv.*), спѣ́чь (*pfv.*); пе́карь=*baker*.

*To roast*=жа́рить (*ipfv.*), пзжа́рить (*pfv.*) [куха́рка *f.*=*a cook*].

<sup>1</sup> This is less ceremonious than обѣ́дать, and rather implies 'pot-luck', *informally*.

## CHAPTER 64

## TO DRINK : ПИТЬ, ВЬПИТЬ

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	пить	pít'	вЬпить	vúpit'
<i>Present</i>	(я) пью	пу́	вЬпью	vúпу
	(онъ) пьётъ	пуóт	вЬпьётъ	vúпует
	(онí) пьютъ	пуúт	вЬпьютъ	vúпуут
<i>Past</i>	(онъ) пилъ	pil	вЬпилъ	vúpil
	(она) пила́	pilá	вЬпила	vúpila
	(онí) пи́ли	pilyi	вЬпили	vúpilyi
<i>Imperative</i> (cf. p. 32)	пейте	p(y)éitye	вЬпейте	vúp(y)eitye (colloquially : vúpityi)

**Present**

Я никогда́ не пью вина́. *И пьётъ вино въ часы молитвы*  
*I never drink wine.* Pushkin

Что вы пьёте ?

*What are you drinking (or, do you drink) ?*

Пью за ва́ше здоро́вье ! (cf. p. 66).

*Here's to you ! (or, for your health).*

**Future** (*Ipfv.*)

Въ Крымú мы бúdeмъ пить крýмекое вино́.

*In the Crimea we shall drink Crimean wine.*

Что вы будете пить, пиво, воду, или квасъ ?  
*What will you drink, beer, water, or kvas ?*

Я больше не буду пить.  
*I shall not drink any more.*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Вы выпьете рюмочку водки ?  
*Will you drink a glass of vodka ?*

Я сегодня выпью немножко красного.  
*I shall drink a little red (sc. wine) to-day.*

Съ удовольствіемъ выпью ещё чашку чаю.  
*I will drink another cup of tea with pleasure.*

Выпьемъ, добрая подружка. XX (I. Pushkin)  
**Past (Ipfv.)**

Что вы пили у нихъ вчера за обѣдомъ ?  
*What did you drink at their house yesterday at dinner ?*

Мы пили отличное крымское бѣлое вино.  
*We drank excellent Crimean white wine.*

Мы тамъ пили каждый вечеръ шампанское.  
*We used to drink champagne there every evening.*

Вы пили когда-нибудь кавказское вино ?  
*Have you ever drunk Caucasian wine ?*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Мы выпили по рюмочкѣ хереса.  
*We drank a glass of sherry each.*

Я уже выпилъ два стака́на чаю.  
*I have already drunk two tumblers of tea.*

Онъ залпомъ выпилъ цѣлую рюмку.  
*He drank a whole (wine-)glass at one draught.*



**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Не пейте этой воды, она не кипячённая.  
*Don't drink this water, it is not boiled.*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Выпейте ещё рюмочку !  
*Have another glass !*

**Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

Я пить хочу (or Мне пить хочется).  
*I am thirsty (lit. I wish to drink ; there is, curiously enough,  
 no adjective thirsty in Russian).*

Что вы больше любите пить ?  
*What do you like drinking best ?*

Вам бы слѣдовало пить по-больше портвейна.  
*You ought to drink more port wine.*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Мне бы хотѣлось выпить хорошаго пива.  
*I should like to have a drink of good beer.*

Я не могу выпить цѣлой бутылки.  
*I can't drink a whole bottle.*

Вы хотите что-нибудь выпить ?  
*Would you like a drink of something ?*

**Cognate and other words**

*To drink one's fill* = напиваться (ipfv.), напиться (pfv.).

Питьё (n.), напитокъ (m.) = beverage ;

пьяный = a drunken man, онъ пьянъ = he is drunk.

[Like пить are conjugated the following verbs :

бить (ipfv.), побить (pfv.) = to beat (N.B. To strike, hit once,  
 is ударить, conjugated like курить, p. 28 ; убивать  
 (ipfv.), убить (pfv.) = to kill, cf. p. 318).

вить (ipfv.), свить (pfv.) = to wind, bind.

лить (ipfv.), полить (pfv.) = to pour.

шить (ipfv.), сшить (pfv.) = to sew.]

рас-шива́тъ разо-шита́ to embroider

на-питы́вать, -питы́тъ. to saturate.

и напрасно льютая звуки. VIII. Тургенев.

милъ тёплый лютній дождь. XII Тургенев.

слёзы льётъ рёской. XVIII Колтовъ.

Я сподальце боевое шолкомъ разошью V. Леминтовъ.

дождь льётъ. XXIII

## CHAPTER 65

TO BUY : ПОКУПАТЬ, КУПИТЬ ; TO SELL : ПРОДАВАТЬ, ПРОДАТЬ

	<i>To buy</i>			
	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	покупать	ракупáйт'	купить	купít'
<i>Present</i>				
(я)	покупаю	ракупа́у	куплю́	куплю́
(онъ)	покупа́етъ	ракупа́уетъ	ку́питъ	ку́питъ
(онѣ)	покупа́ютъ	ракупа́ютъ	ку́пятъ	ку́пятъ
<i>Past</i>				
	покупáлъ	ракупáл	купíлъ	купíл
<i>Imperative</i>				
	покупа́йте	ракупа́йте	купите	купите

**Present**

Гдѣ вы покупáете э́ти папиросы ?

*Where do you buy these cigarettes ?*

Я никогда́ не покупа́ю гото́ваго пла́тья.

*I never buy ready-made clothes.*

**Future (Ipfv.)**

Что вы бу́дете сегóдня въ го́родѣ покупа́ть ?

*What are you going to buy in town to-day ?*

Я бу́ду покупа́ть провѣзѣю на ры́нкѣ.

*I am going to buy food in the market.*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Вы кúпите чтó-нибудь на пáмять ?  
*Shall you buy anything as a souvenir ?*

Ёсли вы устúпите, я куплю ёто кольцо.  
*If you will lower (the price), I will buy this ring.*

Я не куплю ёту кнйгу. Я ничегó не куплю.  
*I shall not buy this book. I shall buy nothing.*

**Past (Ipfv.)**

Я прёжде покупáль мнóго книгъ.  
*Formerly I used to buy a lot of books.*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Гдё вы ёто купили ? Вы чтó-нибудь купили ?  
*Where did you buy that ? Have you bought anything ?*

У когó вы купили ёту шляпу ? Она́ ничегó не купила.  
*From whom (sc. which shop) did you buy that hat ? She (has)  
 bought nothing.*

Какіе цвётъ и какóй шоколадъ вы купили ?  
*What sort of flowers and what sort of chocolates did you buy ?*

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Не покупáйте стóлько (такъ мнóго) вещейъ.  
*Don't buy so many things.*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Купите ёто, ёто оченъ хорóший, прóчный товаръ.  
*Buy that, it is very good, serviceable stuff (goods).*

**Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

Я не люблю покупáть провйзю.  
*I don't like buying food.*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Я хочу́ (мнѣ па́до) купи́ть подаро́къ моёй сестрѣ́.

*I want to (must) buy a present for my sister.*

Что вы совѣ́туете мнѣ́ купи́ть ей́ ?

*What do you advise me to buy her ?*

Вы мо́жете купи́ть ру́сское кру́жево, ви́шивку, куста́р-  
ную рабо́ту, сере́брянное издѣ́ліе съ э́малью и́ли съ  
че́рной, каку́ю-нибу́дь буха́рскую ше́лковую ма́терію  
и́ли ко́врикъ.

*You can buy Russian lace, embroidery, peasants' handicraft,  
silver ware with coloured or black enamel, some Bokhara  
silk material, or a rug.*

Гдѣ́ я могу́ купи́ть почто́выя ма́рки ?

*Where can I buy postage stamps ?*

**Cognate words**

Поку́пка (*f.*) = *a purchase*; она́ пошла́ въ ряды́ (въ пасса́жъ)  
поку́пки дѣ́лать = *she has gone to the covered rows (to the arcade)  
to make purchases.*

**To sell**

For the forms of this verb see pp. 179, 180.

**Present**

Что э́тотъ чело́вѣкъ прода́етъ ?

*What is this man selling ?*

Гдѣ́ прода́ются почто́выя ма́рки ?

*Where are postage stamps sold ?*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Я прода́мъ э́тотъ автомоби́ль, и купи́ю друго́й.

*I shall sell this motor-car and shall buy another one.*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Онъ про́далъ (она́ продала́, они́ продали) мнѣ́ это.  
*He (she, they) sold me this.*

**Imperative**

Не продава́йте. Прода́йте.  
*Don't sell. Sell.*

**Cognate words**

Прода́жа (*f.*) = *sale*; распро́дажа (*f.*) = *a sale, selling off.*

## CHAPTER 66

TO PAY: ПЛАТИ́ТЬ ; TO CHANGE: МѢНЯ́ТЬ  
 TO COST (Chapter 37)

*To pay**Imperfective**Perfective**Infinitive*

плати́ть	platít'	заплати́ть	zaplatyít'
----------	---------	------------	------------

*Present*

(я) плачу́	plachú	заплачу́	zaplachú
------------	--------	----------	----------

(онъ) плати́тъ	plótyit	заплати́тъ	zaplótyit
----------------	---------	------------	-----------

(они́) платя́тъ	plótyat	заплатя́тъ	zaplótyat
-----------------	---------	------------	-----------

*Past*

(онъ) плати́лъ	platyíl	заплати́лъ	zaplatyíl
----------------	---------	------------	-----------

*Imperative*

плати́те	platyíte	заплати́те	zaplatyíte
----------	----------	------------	------------

N.B. Accented a in this verb is pronounced like o.

**Present**

Скóлько вы ему́ платите въ мѣсяць ?

*How much do you pay him a month ?*

Скóлько вы платите за эту кварти́ру ?

*How much do you pay for this flat ?*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Я за васъ заплачу́. Я вамъ заплачу́ потóмъ.

*I will pay for you. I will pay you later.*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Я ужé заплати́лъ счётъ. Скóлько вы заплати́ли за это ?

*I have already paid the bill. How much did you pay for that ?*

(Ipfv.)

**Imperative**

(Pfv.)

Не платите́ ему́ ещё.

*Don't pay him yet.*

Заплатите́ за меня́.

*Pay for me.*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Заплати́ть !

(sc. *I want*) *to pay* (= *take the money, please, or I want to settle the bill*).

Я не могу́ заплати́ть вамъ тепе́рь.

*I can't pay you now.*

**Cognate words**

From this verb are derived amplified forms such as :

Уплачива́ть (*ipfv.*), уплати́ть (*pfv.*) = *to pay back, reimburse.*

Пла́та (*f.*) = *payment* ; беспла́тно = *free, gratis.*

*To cost* (cf. pp. 117–119).

## To change

## Imperfective

## Perfective

## Infinitive

мѣнять	m(y)enyáit'	перемѣнить	perem(y)enyít'
--------	-------------	------------	----------------

## Present

(я) мѣняю	m(y)enyáyu	перемѣню	perem(y)enyú
(онъ) мѣняетъ	m(y)enyáyet	перемѣнитъ	perem(y)ényit
(онѣ) мѣняютъ	m(y)enyáyut	перемѣнятъ	perem(y)ényat

## Past

(онъ) мѣнялъ	m(y)enyál	перемѣнилъ	perem(y)enyíl
--------------	-----------	------------	---------------

## Imperative

мѣняйте	m(y)enyáitue	перемѣните	perem(y)enyítue
---------	--------------	------------	-----------------

Погода мѣняется.           Будеть перемѣна.

*The weather is changing.   There will be a change.*

Я хочу перемѣнить эту вещь, которую я вчера у васъ  
купилъ ; вы мнѣ перемѣните ?

*I want to change this thing which I bought at your shop  
yesterday ; will you change it for me ?*

Перемѣнимъ наши билеты.

*Let us change our tickets.*

*To change money is : размѣнять (pfv.) деньги.*

*A money-changer's = размѣнъ денегъ.*

*Small change = мелочи (f. pl.).*

*Change (from a coin) = сдача.*

*To change places : переѣхать (cf. p. 162).*

*To change clothes : переодѣваться (cf. p. 145).*

*To change one's mind : раздумать (lit. to unthink, cf. p. 22).*

## CHAPTER 67

TO SEE : ВІДѢТЬ; TO LOOK : СМОТРѢТЬ—(ВИДАТЬ, ГЛЯДѢТЬ)

	<i>To see</i>		<i>To look</i>	
	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Imperfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	вѣдѣть	vídyet'	смотрѣть	smatryé't'
<i>Present</i>	(я) вѣжу	vízhu	смотрю	smatryú
	(онъ) вѣдитъ	vídyit	<u>смóтритъ</u>	smótrit
	(онѣ) вѣдятъ	vídyat	смóтрятъ	smótryat
<i>Past</i>	(онъ) вѣдѣлъ	vídyel	смотрѣлъ	smatryé'l
<i>Imperative</i>	смотрѣте <sup>1</sup> smatrítye <sup>1</sup>			
	<i>Perfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	увѣдѣть	uvídyet'	посмотрѣть	pasmatryé't'

To show the use of these verbs at a glance examples of them are given together under the various groups :

**Present**

вѣдѣть

Вы что-нибудь (or кого-нибудь) вѣдите? Ничего (никого) не вѣжу.

Do (or can) you see anything (or any one)? I (can) see nothing (no one).

<sup>1</sup> Вѣдѣть has no imperative; the common particle вѣдь = for, you know that is not connected with this verb, but with вѣдать = to know, cf. p. 176.

Михо смотритъ мѣсяцъ ясны въ колыбель твоею.  
Lermantov. T



Я чтó-то (кого́-то) ви́жу.

*I (can) see something (some one).*

Вы хорошó видите? Отлѣчно (плóхо) ви́жу.

*Can you see all right? I see excellently (badly).*

Я ви́жу, что э́то о́чень трóдно.

*I see, that this is very difficult.*

Ви́дите ли вы?

*Do you see? (Literally and figuratively).*

Мы съ нимъ дово́льно ча́сто ви́димся.

*He and I meet fairly often.*

With this verb the so-called paratactic construction is very common, especially in narration :

Вдругъ ви́дять—къ нимъ навстрѣчу идѣтъ волкъ.

*Suddenly they see a wolf coming towards (to meet) them.*

смотрѣть

На что вы смóтрите такъ прѣстально?

*What are you looking at so fixedly?*

Я смотрѣю въ окнó. Онъ смóтитъ сю́дá.

*I am looking out of (lit. into) the window. He is looking this way.*

Смотрѣю въ окнó и ви́жу—идѣтъ сю́дá ктó-то.

*I look out of the window and see somebody coming this way.*

Я смотрѣю, не найдётся ли у меня ещё дѣнегъ.

*I am looking to see if I have any more money on me.*

Какъ вы смóтрите на э́то дѣло?

*What is your view of this business?*

Онѣ всё ви́дять. Онѣ всё смóтрятъ.

*They see everything. They keep on gazing.*

1809.1

Р

Сизжу и смотрѣю я дорогою XIT A. Tolstoj.  
 — кто смóтритъ всколѣзѣ черезъ отпадъ... Туча

Она́ не ви́дитъ. Она́ не смóтритъ.  
*She does (can) not see. She is not looking.*

### Future (*Ipfv.*)

ви́дѣть

Отту́да (отсю́да) вы бу́дете лу́чше ви́дѣть.  
*From there (from here) you will see better.*

смотре́ть

Что мы бу́демъ сегóдня смотре́ть ?  
*What (sc. sight) are we going to see (to look at) to-day ?*

Мы бу́демъ смотре́ть Музе́й Алекса́ндра Третьяго (Эрми-  
 та́жъ, Публѣчную Библиóтеку, Зи́мній Дворе́цъ).  
*We are going to look at (inspect) the Museum of Alexander III  
 (the Hermitage, the Public Library, the Winter Palace).*

### Future (*Pfv.*)

уви́дѣть (= to perceive)

Когдá вы дойдёте до угла́, вы уви́дите домъ.  
*When you get to the corner you will see the house.*

Вы егó тамъ не уви́дите. Мы потóмъ уви́димъ.  
*You won't see him there. We shall see later on.*

Мы съ ва́ми скóро уви́димся. Когдá мы о́пять уви́димся ?  
*You and I will soon meet. When shall we meet again ?*

Мы до́лго не уви́димся. Мы ещѣ уви́димся.  
*We shan't meet for a long time. We shall meet again (lit.  
 yet).*

посмотрѣть (= to have a look)

Я посмотре́ю, нѣтъ ли егó (ея́) въ моёмъ чемоданѣ.  
*I shall have a look to see if it is(n't) in my trunk.*

Посмотрю тебе́ въ лицо́. *Тург. VIII*

## Past (Ipfv.)

## вѣдѣть

Что (кого) вы тамъ видѣли? Никого (ничего) не видѣлъ.  
*What (whom) did you see there? I saw no one (nothing).*

Я видѣлъ (замѣтилъ) этотъ магазинъ, но не вошелъ.  
*I saw (noticed) that shop, but didn't go in.*

Что вы видѣли вчера въ театрѣ?  
*What did you see yesterday in the theatre?*

Днёмъ мы видѣли 'Вишнёвый Садъ' Чехова, а вечеромъ  
 'На Днѣ' <sup>1</sup> Горькаго.  
*In the afternoon we saw 'The Cherry Orchard' of Chékhov,  
 and in the evening 'At the Bottom' of Górkki.*

Я видѣлъ отлично. Вы хорошо видѣли?  
*I saw perfectly. Did you see well?*

Она ясно видѣла, что это ей невозможно.  
*She saw clearly that this (is sc. was) impossible for her.*

## смотре́ть

Она долго и пристально смотре́ла на меня.  
*She looked long and fixedly at me.*

Вы смотре́ли Исаа́киевскій (Казанскій, Петропа́вловскій)  
 соборъ?  
*Have you seen (inspected, been over) the St. Isaac's (the  
 Kazan, the SS. Peter and Paul) Cathedral?*

На что вы такъ долго смотре́ли тамъ?  
*What were you looking at there for such a long time?*

Мальчикъ смотре́лъ въ окно. Они́ смотре́ли сюда (туда).  
*The boy was looking out of the window. They were looking  
 this (that) way.*

<sup>1</sup> N.B. nom. sing. дно (n.) = the bottom, ground.

Луна на меня P <sup>2</sup> из-за тучи смотре́ла, X

**Past (Pfv.)**

увидѣть (= to perceive)

Когдѣ мы дошли до концѣ улицы, мы его увидѣли.

*When we reached the end of the street we saw him (or it).*

Она вдругъ увидѣла его передъ собой.

*She suddenly saw him in front of her.*

Они тогда увидѣли всю истину (ог правду).

*They then perceived the whole truth.*

посмотрѣть (= to give a look)

Она посмотрѣла на меня съ ужасомъ.

*She looked at me with horror.*

Я посмотрѣлъ въ окно и увидѣлъ его на улицѣ.

*I looked out of the window and saw him in the street.*

Я ужѣ посмотрѣлъ тамъ, но не нашѣлъ.

*I have already looked there, but didn't find (it).*

Мы ужѣ посмотрѣли всѣ достопримѣчательности.

*We have already inspected all the sights.***Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Не смотрите туда ! Смотрите !

*Don't look that way ! Mind, be careful, take care !**Смотри жѣ... да что !* III *Lesson 10.***Imperative (Pfv.)**

Посмотрите сюда ! Посмотрите (на это) !

*Look here (only literally) ! Look (at this) ! See !*

Посмотрите, не можете ли вы гдѣ-нибудь найти.

*Have a look to see if you can't find (it) anywhere.*

Посмотримъ ! Увидимъ !

*Let's have a look ! (also =) 'We shall see !'**Смотри, какъ мѣтвенъ молодой  
стоитъ' обгьяны берѣзы YV' Tyuchen*

**Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

вѣдѣть

Я не могу вѣдѣть (equally commonly : я не вижу).

*I can't see (the first phrase also = I can't bear the sight of).*

смотреѣть

Я не люблю смотреѣть на такія вещи.

*I don't like looking at such things.***Infinitive (Pfv.)**

увѣдѣть

Когда мнѣ придется увѣдѣть это мѣсто !

*When will it fall to my lot to see this place again !*

посмотрѣть

Я хочу посмотреѣть. Можно мнѣ посмотреѣть ?

*I want to have a look. May I have a look ?*

Посмотрѣть намъ ? Пойдемъ посмотреѣть.

*Shall we have a look ? Let's go and have a look.*

Мы сегодня хотимъ посмотреѣть Храмъ Спасителя, Кремль  
(Оружейную Палату и Успенскій Соборъ въ Кремлѣ),  
и Третьяковскую Галлерію.

*To-day we wish to see (inspect) the Temple of the Saviour,  
the Kremlin (the Armoury, and the Cathedral of the  
Assumption in the Kremlin), and the Tretyakóv Gallery.*

There is another form of the verb вѣдѣть which is very  
commonly used in certain phrases. This is :

видать (*imperfective*), увидать (*perfective*).

These two verbs are only used in the infinitive and in the  
past :

**Past (Ipfv.)**Вы видали<sup>1</sup> Храмъ Воскресѣнія въ Петроградѣ ?*Have you seen the Temple of the Resurrection in Petrograd ?*

<sup>1</sup> Specifically the outside, and not necessarily the inside.

Вы видáли какúю-нибóдь рúсскую пьéсу ?  
*Have you seen any Russian play ?*

Видáль.                    Не видáль.            Никогдá не видáла.  
*I have seen (it).    I have not.        I (fem.) have never seen.*

The word *когда-нибудь* (= *ever*) can be added in questions, but it is not necessary.

### Past (*Pfv.*)

The pasts *увидáль* and *увидѣль* are used without any difference of meaning in affirmative sentences meaning *perceived, caught sight of, saw*. From the nature of the verb itself neither of these *perfective* forms is much used in negative sentences, in which the *imperfective* forms *видáль* and *видѣль* naturally replace them. The following examples illustrate both verbs :

Мы увидáли or увидѣли егó.  
*We saw him (did see him, perceived him, caught sight of him),*  
 se. more or less suddenly or unexpectedly, or after a long time.

Мы видѣли её вчерá.      Гдѣ вы её видѣли ?  
*We saw her yesterday.    Where did you see her ?*

Мы её вчерá не видѣли or не видáли.  
*We did not see her yesterday.*

Вы её видáли ?                    Вы её вчерá видѣли ?  
*Have you seen her (ever) ?    Did you see her yesterday ?*

Я её не видáль.            Я её не видѣль.  
*I have not seen her.    I did not see her.*

Я её видáль, тóлько óчень давнó.  
*I have seen her, only very long ago.*

**Infinitive** (*Impfv.* ; *pfv.* seldom used)

Ничего не видать (ог не видно). Отсюда видать далекó.  
*There is nothing to be seen. From here one can see a long way.*

Видать по́ездъ ? По́езда не видать.  
*Is the train in sight? The train is not in sight.*

There is a curious idiom : видать-то видаль ! which means approximately *I have seen such a thing, but that's all.* The *imperfective frequentative* видывать is occasionally used in such phrases as :

я такіхъ я́блокъ не ви́дывалъ = *I have never seen such apples in all my life.*

There is another verb : *to glance, to look*, which is very much used, especially in literature :

Глядѣть (*impfv.* ; *pres.* гляжѹ, глядѣтъ, глядѣтъ, *past* глядѣлъ, *imper.* глядѣте), поглядѣть (*pfv.* ; identical conjugation) = *to look.* *Ger. ма́дя.* (accent thrown back from usual position)

From this verb is derived another very common one :

Взглядывать (*impfv.* ; *pres.* взглядываю, &c.), взглянуть (*pfv.* ; *pres.* взгляну́, взглянетъ, взглянутъ, *past* взгляну́ль, *imper.* взгляните) = *to throw a glance at.*

Заглянуть (*pfv.*) = *to look in on any one, drop in ;*

Загляните къ намъ какъ-нибудь вѣчеромъ.

*Look us up some evening if you can.*

Наглядѣться (*pfv.*) = *to feast one's eyes on.*

From *смотре́ть* are derived the following compound verbs amongst others :

Осматривать (*impfv.* ; *pres.* осматриваю, -ваешь), осмотрѣть (*pfv.*) = *to examine, inspect.*

Посматривать (*impfv.*) = *to glance from time to time.*

Просматривать (*impfv.*), просмотрѣть (*pfv.*) = *to look through* (e.g. a book of pictures).

Разсматривать (*impfv.*), рассмотреть (*pfv.*) = *to examine carefully.*

From глядѣть also numerous compounds are derived, but these are not so common, except those which have been already given.

### Cognate words and expressions

Видъ (*m.*) = *a view, aspect*; красивый видъ = *a beautiful view*, оттуда хорóший видъ на весь гóродъ = *from there is a good view of the whole town*, (не) совершенный видъ = *the (im)perfective aspect*.

Видно (от видать) = *evidently, it is evident*.

Очевидно = *evidently*, по-видимому = *apparently*.

The word видно is very often used, like the infinitive видать, with the meaning *one can see, is to be seen, is in sight*. The masculine and feminine forms of the word, which is really the short or predicative form of the adjective видный (= *conspicuous, stately, good-looking*), are виденъ, видна, but these are seldom used:

Домъ отсюда видно (от видать). *Чуть виденъ чер-*  
*One can see the house from here. -ничтощій садъ* XXIII А.Т.

Его отсюда не видно (от не видать).

*One can't see it from there. Оттуда виденъ и Кавказъ* X Lev.

Рѣкѣ видно (от видать). Рѣки не видно (от не видать).

*One can see the (or a) river. One can't see the (or any) river.*

Ихъ ещё видно. Ихъ уже не видать.

*They are still in sight. They are no longer in sight.*

Смотръ (*m.*) = *a review, parade*; осмотръ (*m.*) = *an inspection*. The indeclinable participle of смотрѣть is used in the common phrase: *несмотря на то, что* = *in spite of the fact that*.

Взглядъ (*m.*) = *a look, glance*; *view, opinion*. [*Sight (the faculty) is: зрѣніе (n.)*.]

### To look (intransitive)

There is no verb to express this, and it has to be rendered by the phrase:

Имѣть видъ = *to have a look* (sc. *an appearance*).

Это яблоко имѣеть неважный видъ.

*This apple doesn't look up to much* (lit. *an unimportant look*).

*Богатырь ты будешь съ виду* V. *детишекъ*



Эти грибы имѣють подозрительный (сомнительный) видъ.  
*These mushrooms look suspicious (doubtful).*

У васъ сегодня плохой (хороший) видъ.  
*You look poorly (well) to-day.*

У него всегда такой странный видъ.  
*He always looks so queer (strange, peculiar).*

Эти фрукты имѣють видъ будто они не зрѣлые (ог не спѣлые);—испорчены, переспѣлые.  
*This fruit looks as though it is not ripe;—spoilt, overripe.*

## CHAPTER 68

TO HEAR: СЛЫШАТЬ; TO LISTEN: СЛУШАТЬ  
 (TO OBEY)—СЛЫХАТЬ—(TO SMELL)

To hear  
 Imperfective

To listen  
 Imperfective

Infinitive

слышать      slýshat'      слúшать      slúshat'

Present

(я) слышу      slýshu      слúшаю      slúshayu  
 (онъ) слышитъ <sup>1</sup>      slýshyt <sup>1</sup>      слúшаетъ      slúshayet  
 (они) слышать      slýshat      слúшаютъ      slúshayut

Past

(онъ) слышалъ      slýshal      слúшалъ      slúshal

Imperative

слúшайте <sup>2</sup>      slúshaitye <sup>2</sup>

Perfective

Perfective

Infinitive

услышать      uslýshat'      послúшать      paslúshat'

<sup>1</sup> и after ш=ы (y), cf. p. 2.

<sup>2</sup> The *imperative* слышите is seldom used.

## Present

## слы́шать

Вы слы́шите что́-нибудь (ог когó-нибудь) ?  
*Do (ог can) you hear anything (ог any one) ?*

Я что́-то (когó-то) слы́шу. Я ничегó (никогó) не слы́шу.  
*I (can) hear something (-one). I (can) hear nothing (no one).*

Вы хорошó слы́шите ? Отли́чно (плóхо) слы́шу.  
*Can you hear all right ? I hear excellently (badly).*

Вы слы́шите, что́ <sup>1</sup> я вамъ говорю́ ?  
*Do you hear what I am saying to you ?*

Слы́шите ли вы ? ог Вы слы́шите ?  
*Do you hear ?*

Я слы́шу, что ему́ вдругъ ста́ло хуже.  
*I hear that he has suddenly become worse.*

Слы́шите ли вы, какъ онѣ стрѣ́ляютъ ?  
*Do (ог can) you hear them shooting ?*

Вдругъ слы́шать—кто́-то кричи́тъ.  
*Suddenly they hear somebody shouting (cf. p. 209).*

Я слы́шу звонъ колоколóвъ (какъ звеня́тъ <sup>2</sup> колоколá).  
*I hear the sound of the church-bells (the bells ringing).*

## слу́шать

Я слу́шаю, какъ звоня́тъ <sup>3</sup> въ колоколá.  
*I am listening to them ringing the bells.*

<sup>1</sup> Cf. note on p. 59.

<sup>2</sup> From звенѣ́тъ=*to ring, to resound* (intransitive), *pres.* онъ звенѣ́тъ.

<sup>3</sup> From звонѣ́тъ=*to ring* (transitive), *pres.* звонѣ́тъ, звонѣ́тъ.

Чьи лекции (ог доклады) вы слѹшаете ?

*Whose lectures are you attending ?*

Слѹшаю ! (ог Слѹшаю-сь, -сь contracted from сѹдарь =  
Sir).

*Very good, yes, Sir !*

### Future (Ipfv.)

слѹшать

Если вы сѹдете здѣсь, вы бѹдете лѹчше слѹшать.

*If you (will) sit here, you will hear better.*

слѹшать

Я бѹду слѹшать лекции по истѹрии.

*I am going to hear (listen to) lectures on history.*

Если вы не бѹдете слѹшать дѹктора, вамъ сдѣлается  
хѹже.

*If you don't listen to the doctor, you will get worse.*

Какѹю ѹперу мы бѹдемъ сегоднѹ слѹшать ?

*What opera are we going to hear (listen to) to-day ?*

### Future (Pfv.)

слѹшать

Если вы услѹшите чтѹ-нибудь, скажите мнѣ.

*If you (shall) hear anything, tell me.*

Она васъ оттѹда не услѹшитъ.

*She won't (be able to) hear you from there.*

Позвоните опѹть, они мѹжетъ быть услѹшать.

*Ring the bell again, perhaps they will hear.*

Отсюда я ничегѹ не услѹшу. Вы услѹшите !

*From here I shall hear nothing. You will hear !*

слу́шать

Вы за́втра послу́шаете, какъ она́ поётъ.  
*You will hear (listen) to-morrow how she sings.*

Я послу́шаю, чтò онъ тепе́рь говори́тъ.  
*I will listen to what he is now saying.*

**Past** (*Ipfv.*)

слы́шать

Я уже́ позвони́лъ, но вы ка́жется не слы́шали.  
*I have already rung, but I fancy you didn't hear (it).*

Вы слы́шали чтò-нибудь интере́снаго ?  
*Have you heard (did you hear) anything (of) interesting ?*

Вы слы́шали, что они́ за́втра уѣзжа́ютъ ?  
*Have you heard that they are leaving to-morrow ?*

Вы слы́шали звонóкъ ? Я ничегó не слы́шалъ.  
*Did you hear the bell (ring) ? I heard nothing.*

слу́шать

Вы меня́ не слу́шали, а тепе́рь жалѣ́ете.  
*You wouldn't listen to me, and now you are sorry.*  
 и долго слы́шала - увлечена XII Гусев

**Past** (*Pfv.*)

услы́шать

Когда́ мы вошлиъ въ домъ, мы услы́шали ихъ голоса́.  
*When we entered the house, we heard their voices.*

Мы шли по у́лицѣ, а вдругъ услы́шали вы́стрѣль.  
*We were walking along the street, when we suddenly heard the report of a gun.*

послу́шать

Онъ меня́ не послу́шалъ. Вы когó вчера́ послу́шали ?  
*He didn't listen to me. Whom did you hear yesterday ?*

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Слушайте меня ! Не слушайте его.  
*Listen to me (sc. Beware) ! Don't listen to him.*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Послушайте !  
*Listen ! Hear !*

**Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

слышать

Я не могу слышать (equally commonly : я не слышу).  
*I can't hear (the first phrase also = I can't bear the sound of).*

слушать

Я не хочу вас слушать.  
*I don't want to listen to you (sc. to hear what you have to say).*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

послушать (услышать is seldom used)

Мнѣ бы хотѣлось послушать этого пѣвца (эту пѣвицу).  
*I should like to hear this singer (= fem.).*

The reflexive *perfective* *послышаться* is often used in books as a passive of *слышать* : *послушавший* obedient. *.. -ly.*  
*послушно*  
 Вдругъ послышались шаги. Послышался шумъ.  
*Suddenly footsteps were heard. A noise was heard.*

The reflexive verb *слушаться (ipfv.)*, *послушаться (pfv.)*  
 = to obey.

Онъ меня не слушается. Я его послушался.  
*He doesn't obey me. I obeyed him.*

Я не хочу слушаться доктора. Надо слушаться.  
*I don't want to obey the doctor. One must obey.*

и начала *слушаться* к шуму,  
*to listen attentively.*

There is another form of the verb слы́шать which is very commonly used in certain phrases ; this is : слы́хатъ (*imperfective*), услы́хатъ (*perfective*). These two verbs (like видáть and увидáть, cf. p. 213) are only used in the infinitive and in the past.

я. тебя слыжала. 2.0

### Past (*Ipfv.*)

Вы слы́хали óперу Гли́нки, ' Жизнь за Царя́ ' ?  
*Have you heard Glinka's opera, ' My life for the Tsar ' ?*

Вы слы́хали э́того пѣвца́ (э́ту пѣви́цу) ?  
*Have you heard this singer ? (= fem.)*

Слы́халъ. Не слы́халъ. Никогд́а не слы́хала.  
*I have heard (it). I have not. I (fem.) have never heard.*

The word когд́а-нибудъ (= *ever*) can be added in questions, but is not necessary.

### Past (*Pfv.*)

The pasts услы́халъ and услы́шала (like увидáлъ and увидѣлъ, cf. p. 214) are used without any difference of meaning in affirmative sentences meaning *heard, caught sound of*. From the nature of the verb itself neither of these *perfective* forms is much used in negative sentences, in which the *imperfective* forms слы́халъ and слы́шала naturally replace them. The following examples illustrate both verbs :

Мы услы́хали от услы́шали крикъ.  
*We heard a scream (caught the sound of), sc. more or less suddenly or unexpectedly, or after a long time.*

Мы слы́шали э́то вчера́. Гдѣ вы э́то слы́шали ?  
*We heard this yesterday. Where did you hear it ?*

Мы ея́ вчера́ не слы́шали от не слы́хали.  
*We did not hear her yesterday.*

Вы её слы́хали ?                      Вы её вчера́ слы́шали ?  
*Have you heard her (ever) ? Did you hear her yesterday ?*

Я её не слы́халъ.                      Я её не слы́шалъ.  
*I have not heard her. I did not hear her.*

Я его́ слы́халъ, то́лько о́чень да́вно.  
*I have heard him, only very long ago.*

### Infinitive (*Ipfv.* ; *pfv.* seldom used)

Ничего́ не слы́хатъ (ог не слы́шно). Что сего́дня слы́хатъ ?  
*There is nothing to be heard. What news is there to-day ?*

There is a curious idiom : слы́хатъ-то слы́халъ ! which means approximately *I have heard tell about it.*

From слýшать are derived several compound verbs, amongst which is :

Подслýшивать (*ipfv.*), подслýшать (*pfv.*)=*to overhear* (literally : *to underhear*).

### Cognate word and expression

Слухъ (*m.*)=*a rumour ; the faculty of hearing.*

Отъ него́ (ог о нёмъ) ни слýху ни дýху (*saying*).

*From him (or about him) there is neither sound nor smell.*

(=*There is no news of him, he gives no sign of life.*)

### To smell (transitive)

To express this the verb слы́шать is often used :

Здѣсь непрíятный за́пахъ, ра́звѣ вы не слы́шите ?  
*There is an unpleasant smell here, don't you smell it ?*

‘Ли́сица услы́хала сы́рный духъ.’

‘*The fox smelt the smell of cheese.*’

Another word is ню́хать (*ipfv.*), поню́хать (*pfv.*)=*to sniff* :

Поню́хайте э́ти цвѣ́ты, о́ни о́чень ду́шисты.

*Smell these flowers, they smell very sweet.*

To smell (intransitive)

Пáхнуть (*ipfv.*) = to smell ; воня́ть (*ipfv.*) = to stink.

Éто хорошó пáхнетъ. Тутъ пáхнетъ дýмомъ.

That smells nice. It smells of smoke here (instr.).

## CHAPTER 69

TO READ : ЧИТА́ТЬ, ПРОЧÉСТЬ

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	читáть	chitá't'	прочéсть	praché'st'
<i>Present</i>				
	(я) читáю	chitáyu	прочтú	prachtú
	(онъ) читáетъ	chitáyet	прочтётъ	prachtyót
	(онí) читáютъ	chitáyut	прочтúтъ	prachtút
<i>Past</i>				
	(онъ) читáлъ	chitál	прочёлъ	prachól
	(онá) читáла	chitála	прочлá	prachlá
	(онí) читáли	chitályi	прочли́	prachlyí
<i>Imperative</i>	читáйте	chitáitye	прочтíте	prachtyítye

There is another form of the *perfective*: прочитáть, which is just as common as прочéсть and is conjugated exactly like читáть.

Both прочéсть and прочитáть mean *to read through, to finish reading*.<sup>1</sup> There is also a *perfective* verb почитáть = *to read for a short while, for a little*. The *imperfective* читáть can be used intransitively as well as transitively.

<sup>1</sup> Both these verbs are, strictly speaking, perfectives, not of читáть, but of прочítыватъ, but they are much commoner than почитáть, and are therefore treated more fully here.



**Present**

Что вы читáете ? Я читáю рúсскую газету.

*What are you reading ? I am reading a Russian newspaper.*

Я читáю 'Преступлénиe и Наказáниe' Достоевскаго

*I am reading 'Crime and Punishment' of Dostoyevski.*

Вы много читáете ? Я óчень máло читáю.

*Do you read much ? I read very little.*

Онъ никогда не читáетъ. Она всё читáетъ.

*He never reads. She reads everything (or is always reading).*

**Future (Ipfv.)**

Что мы сего́дня бúдемъ читáть ?

*What are we going to read to-day ?*

Зáвтра я бúду весь (ог цѣлый) день читáть.

*To-morrow I shall read all day long.*

Я éтой кни́ги не бúду читáть.

*I am not going to read this book.*

Вы бúдете читáть éту кни́гу ?

*Are you going to read this book ?*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Я прочтú (ог прочтáю) письмó и отдáмъ егó вамъ.

*I will read through the letter and give it back to you.*

Вы скóро прочтёте éту статью.

*You will soon read this article through.*

Мы сего́дня прочтáемъ éтотъ разскáзь.

*To-day we will read (through) this short story.*

**Past (Ipfv.)**

Вы читáли (когда-нибудь) 'Анну Карéнину' <sup>1</sup> Толстóго ?  
*Have you (ever) read 'Anna Karénina' of Tolstoi ?*

Читáль. Не читáла. 'Войну́ и Мирь' я читáль.  
*I have read (it). I (fem.) have not. 'War and Peace'*  
*I have read.*

Что вы читáли сего́дня во вре́мя уро́ка ?  
*What did you read (were you reading) to-day during the*  
*lesson ?*

Мы читáли 'Стихотворéния въ Прóзѣ' Тургéнева.  
*We read (or were reading, sc. some of, or from) the 'Poems in*  
*Prose' of Turgénev.*

Когда́ я вошёлъ въ ко́мнату, она́ читáла журналъ.  
*When I entered the room, she was reading a magazine.*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Вы ужé прочли́ (огр прочитáли) эту́ кни́гу ?  
*Have you already read through (finished) this book ?*

Вы прочли́ письмó ? Нѣтъ, ещё не читáль.  
*Have you read the letter ? No, I have not yet read (it).*

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Не читáйте такъ много, вы (не)пóртите глаза́.  
*Don't read so much, you (will spoil) are spoiling your eyes.*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Прочтíте (огр прочитáйте) этотъ разскáзь, и потóмъ  
 скажíте какóе онъ на васъ производíтъ впечатлѣнiе.  
*Read through this story and then tell me what sort of impres-*  
*sion it makes on you.*

<sup>1</sup> The titles of books are declined where this is feasible.

Прочтите (or прочита́йте) мнѣ это вслухъ (or грѣмко).  
*Read me this aloud.*

### Infinitive (Ipfv.)

Я не могу́ (не хочу́) чита́ть этой кни́ги тепе́рь.  
*I cannot (don't want) to read this book now.*

Мнѣ не́когда чита́ть. Онѣ не лю́битъ чита́ть.  
*I have no time to read. He doesn't like reading.*

Совѣ́тую вамъ чита́ть по-бо́льше вслухъ.  
*I advise you to read aloud more (as much as you can).*

Э́того я не совѣ́тую вамъ чита́ть.  
*I don't advise you to read this (I advise you not to read).*

Како́го а́втора (писа́теля) вы мнѣ совѣ́туете чита́ть ?  
*Which author (writer) do you advise me to read ?*

### Infinitive (Pfv.)

Я хочу́ проче́сть (or прочита́ть) э́ту главу́ (страницу́).  
*I want to read through this chapter (page).*

Совѣ́тую вамъ прочита́ть 'Запи́ски Охо́тника'.<sup>1</sup>  
*I advise you to read the 'Notes of a Sportsman'.*

Мнѣ бы хотѣ́лось прочита́ть како́е нибу́дь стихотво́ре́ніе  
 (какую́-нибу́дь по́эму) Пу́шкина и́ли Ле́рмонтова, и́ли  
 же наро́дную скáзку, ба́сню Кры́лова и́ли разска́зь  
 Го́голя.

*I should like to read (through now) some poem of Púshkin or  
 Lérmontov, or else a folk-tale, or fable of Krylón, or  
 a short story of Gógol (pronounced Gógal').*

<sup>1</sup> Of Turgénev.

**Cognate words**

Чтѣніе (*n.*)=*reading*; читальня (*f.*)=*reading-room*.

There are several compound verbs derived from читать, the commonest being :

Перечитывать (*ipfv.*; *pres.* перечитываю, перечитываетъ, &c.),  
перечитать (*pfv.*)=*to read over again*.

Прочитывать (*ipfv.* corresponding in meaning to прочитать)=  
*to read through often*.

There is also a double compound verb which is very common :  
Предпочитать (*ipfv.*), предпочѣсть (*pfv.*)=*to prefer*.

Я предпочитаю этотъ переплѣть.

*I prefer this binding.*

Though it is just as usual to say :

Этотъ переплѣть мнѣ нравится больше.

*This binding pleases me more (cf. p. 323).*

From читать is further derived the verb meaning *to count* (also *to consider*) ; this verb, although a compound of читать (with the preposition съ) is nevertheless *imperfective*, being looked on as a separate verb ; from this has been formed, with the second addition of со (=съ), a further *perfective* verb, meaning *to count up*, cf. chapter 70. Another verb, formed somewhat analogously, is that meaning *to honour, to respect* : почитать (*ipfv.*) [почтѣть or почѣсть, *pfv.*, seldom used ; from these is derived the word почтѣ=almost, sc. *consider as, regard as*] ; from this verb are derived such words as честь (*f.*)=*honour*, честный=*honest*, почѣсть (*f.*)=*an honour, distinction*, почтѣніе (*n.*)=*respect*.

## CHAPTER 70

### TO COUNT (TO CONSIDER) : СЧИТАТЬ

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	считать	schitá't'	сосчитать	saschitá't'
<i>Present</i>	(я) считаю	schitáyu	сосчитаю	saschitáyu

Both verbs are conjugated exactly like читать (cf. p. 224).

**Present**

Я считаю, что это очень несправедливо.

*I consider that that is very unjust.*

Вы считаете, что это полезно (выгодно)?

*Do you consider that this is good for one (profitable)?*

Это считается очень невежливо (неприлично).

*That is considered very rude (improper).*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Я сосчитаю сколько у меня денегъ.

*I shall count up how much money I have.*

Я сосчитаюсь съ вами потѣмъ.

*I shall settle up with you later.*

**Past (Ipfv.)**

Я считалъ его за мошенника (жулика).

*I thought him a rogue.*

Онъ у насъ считался дуракомъ (шалапаемъ).

*Amongst us he was considered a fool (rotter).*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Вы сосчитали, сколько я вамъ долженъ?

*Have you reckoned up how much I owe you?*

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Не считайте меня, пожалуйста.

*Don't consider me, please.*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Сосчитайте, сколько у васъ пакетовъ.

*Count up how many parcels you have.*

**Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

Можно считатьъ его за великаго писателя.

*One may consider him a great writer.*

На́до счита́ться съ э́тимъ ф́актомъ.

*One has to reckon with this fact.*

### Infinitive (Pfv.)

Невозмо́жно сосчита́ть, ско́лько здѣсь люде́й.

*It is impossible to count how many people there are here.*

Мнѣ́ (огъ намъ) на́до съ ва́ми тепе́рь сосчита́ться.

*I must settle up my account with you now.*

The *perfective* of счита́ть, meaning *to consider*, is *счесть* (conjugated like *прочесть*, cf. p. 224) :

### Future (Pfv.)

Я сочту́ свои́мъ долго́мъ пойти́ туда́.

*I shall consider it my duty to go there.*

(Notice the use of the predicative instrumental in this and the following examples ; cf. pp. 120, 121, 229).

### Past (Pfv.)

Я сче́ль ну́жнымъ сказа́ть вамъ э́то.

*I considered it necessary to tell you this.*

Она́ сочла́ необходи́мымъ написа́ть ему́.

*She considered it essential to write to him.*

### Cognate words and expressions

Сче́ть (*m.*)=*bill, account* ; на мой сче́тъ=*at my expense* (used literally and figuratively), на э́то́тъ сче́тъ=*as regards this matter, as far as that goes*, на сче́тъ то́го . . .=*concerning that matter* (sc. of which we were talking) ; свести́ сче́ты=*to settle up one's accounts*. (This word must not be confused with щётка=*a brush*.)

A further amplification of the verb счита́ть is :

Разсчи́тывать (*ipfv.*), расчи́тать (*pfv.*)=*to calculate*. Я на васъ расчи́тываю=*I am counting on you* ; мо́жно на э́то расчи́тывать=*can one count (depend) on that ?*

## CHAPTER 71

TO WRITE: ПИСАТЬ; TO PLAY: ИГРАТЬ; TO SING:  
ПѢТЬ

To write

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	писáть	pisá't'	написáть	napisá't'
<i>Present</i>				
(я) пишу́	pishú	напишу́	napishú	
(онъ) пи́шетъ	píshet	напи́шетъ	napíshet	
(онѳ) пи́шутъ	píshut	напи́шутъ	napíshut	
<i>Past</i>				
(онъ) писáлъ	pisál	написáлъ	napisál	
<i>Imperative</i>				
пи́шите <sup>1</sup>	pishýtye <sup>1</sup>	напи́шите <sup>1</sup>	napishýtye <sup>1</sup>	

This verb also means *to paint (pictures)*, but is not used for painting walls, &c.

## Present

Я пишу́ писемó. Вы óчень много пи́шете ?

*I am writing a letter. Do you write a great deal ?*

Я пишу́ много писемъ. Онъ мнѣ часто пи́шетъ.

*I write many letters (gen. plur.). He often writes me.*

Какія (or какóго рóда) картины она́ пи́шетъ ?

*What sort (or of what sort) of pictures does she paint ?*

Она́ пи́шетъ пейза́жи, а также и портреты́.

*She paints landscapes, but also portraits.*

Я пишу́ карандашóмъ, а вы пи́шете перóмъ.

*I am writing in pencil, but you are writing with a pen.*

<sup>1</sup> и after ш=ы (y), cf. p. 2.

**Future (Ipfv.)**

Завтра я буду весь (от цѣлый) день письма писать.  
*To-morrow I am going to write letters all day.*

Вы будете мнѣ часто писать оттуда?  
*You will often write to me from there?*

Что вы будете теперь (сегодня) писать?  
*What are you going to write now (to-day)?*

Я (больше) ничего не буду писать.  
*I am not going to write anything (more).*

Что вы будете дѣлать? Я буду писать письма.  
*What are you going to do? I am going to write letters.*

Когда вы будете ей писать?  
*When are you going to write to her?*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Я напишу ему сегодня непременно.  
*I shall write him to-day without fail.*

Я напишу письмо, и потомъ пойду гулять.  
*I shall write a letter and then go for a walk.*

Если напишете все ваши письма теперь, мы пойдѣмъ  
 вмѣстѣ на почту (въ почтовое отдѣленіе).  
*If you finish writing all your letters now we will go together  
 to the post (postal department).*

Вы напишете это письмо сегодня?  
*Will you (or, can you) write this letter to-day?*

**Past (Ipfv.)**

Вы имъ писали? Писалъ. Не писалъ.  
*Have you written them? I have. I have not.*



Вы мнѣ давно не писали ; отчего это ?

*You haven't written to me for a long time ; why is it ?*

Она всё утро писала.

*She has been (or was) writing all the morning.*

Прежде онъ писалъ больше чѣмъ теперь.

*Formerly he used to write more than (he does) now.*

### Past (Pfv.)

Когда вы имъ написали ? Я написалъ вчера.

*When did you write them ? I wrote yesterday.*

Я уже (давно) написалъ вамъ про это.

*I have already (long ago) written you about this.*

Я сегодня написалъ два письма, пять закрытыхъ писемъ  
и одиннадцать открытокъ.

*I have to-day written two letters, five letter-cards, and eleven  
postcards.*

Эту картину написалъ известный русскій художникъ.

*This picture was painted by a famous Russian artist.*

### Imperative (Ipfv.)

Пишите намъ по-чаще ! Не пишите ей.

*Write us as often as you can ! Don't write to her.*

### Imperative (Pfv.)

Напишите скорѣе, какіе у васъ планы.

*Write (us) as soon as you can what are your plans.*

Напишите вашъ адресъ и нѳмеръ телефѳна на вашей  
визитной карточкѣ.

*Write down your address and telephone number on your  
visiting-card.*

Напишіте отчётливо и крупнымъ шрифтомъ ;—большими бѣквами.

*Write clearly and in large characters ;—in capital letters.*

### Infinitive (Ipfv.)

Я ужасно не люблю писать письма.

*I hate writing letters (lit. awfully don't like).*

Я не умѣю писать русскими бѣквами (от русскимъ шрифтомъ), а только французскими бѣквами (от французскимъ шрифтомъ).

*I cannot write in Russian letters (or in Russian characters), but only in French (sc. Latin) characters.*

### Infinitive (Pfv.)

Я хочу (от мнѣ надо, нѣжно) написать письмо.

*I want to (or I must) write a letter.*

Куда мнѣ ему написать, въ Москвѣ или въ деревню ?

*Where am I to write him, to Moscow or to the country ?*

Вы можете написать это письмо сегодня ?

*Can you (will you be able) to write this letter to-day ?*

Я попрошѣ васъ написать что-нибудь подѣ диктовку.

*I shall ask you to write me something at dictation.*

Скажи, что я пишу тебѣ. Lernunt

### Cognate words and expressions

Писаніе (*n.*)=*the act of writing* ; писатель(ница)=(1) *author(ess)*, (2) *painter* ; живопись (*f.*)=*the art of painting*.

*To paint a wall or house* is : красить (cf. p. 29) or малевать.

From писать are derived many compound verbs, of which the commonest are :

Выписывать (*ipfv.* ; *pres.* выписываю), выписать (*pfv.*)=*to order by post*.

Записывать (*ipfv.*), записать (*pfv.*)=*to note down* ; записка (*f.*)=*a note*.

и пѣль окъ такъ нежно и страстно. X/A.T.  
 спой мнѣ пѣню. X/I Pishkin }

Описывать (*ipfv.*), описатьъ (*pfv.*)=*to describe*; описаніе (*n.*)=*a description.*

Переписываться съ кѣмъ (*ipfv.*)=*to correspond*; переписка (*f.*)=*correspondence (the act of).*

Подписывать, подписать=*to sign*; used reflexively=*to sign one's name*; по́дпись (*f.*)=*a signature.*

Приписывать, приписатьъ=*to ascribe.*

Прописывать, прописатьъ=*to prescribe*; *to copy out.*

Расписаться (*pfv.*)=*to sign one's name for a receipt*; распіска (*f.*, от квитанція)=*a receipt*; распісаніе (от распісаніе) поѣздѣвъ=*a time-table of trains.*

такъ прозрачно золотистъ играющій на солнышъ листъ  
 амъ мальчикъ To play играеть на дудкѣ <sup>x1</sup> Лемантовъ A.7

Играть (*ipfv.*; like читать), сыграть (*pfv.* = съ + играть, cf. p. 288)=*to play (intransitive and transitive).*

Вы играете въ карты, въ шахматы, въ шашки, въ бильярдъ, въ лаунъ-тѣннисъ, на роялѣ, на скрипкѣ?  
*Do you play cards, chess, draughts, billiards, lawn-tennis, the piano, the violin?*

Сыграемъ партію! Сыграйте намъ что-нибудь!

*Let's have a game! Play us something!*

Игра (*f.*)=*a game*; игрушка=*a toy.*

Выигрывать (*ipfv.*), выиграть (*pfv.*)=*to win.*

Проигрывать (*ipfv.*), проиграть (*pfv.*)=*to lose.*

### To sing

Пѣть (*ipfv.*; pres. пою, поётъ, поютъ—*рау́ю, рау́от, рау́ют, past пѣль, imper. пойте), спѣть (pfv.) = to sing (intrans. and trans.).*

Вы поёте? Споёте намъ что-нибудь!

*Do you sing? Sing us something!*

Пѣсня (*f.*; dimin. пѣсенка)=*a song.*

.. Пѣсенку спюто Лемантовъ V.

Войтъ идетъ онъ, поетъ II Koltov

Труба пастушьья поутру ещё не погла звонко, A.

И что полголоса поётъ XI Лемантовъ.

Почотъ, заливаясь, .. (prouing solos out) XIII A.T.

Късеню мнѣ поётъ XV III Koltov.

## CHAPTER 72

### TO SEND: СЛАТЬ, ПОСЫЛАТЬ

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	слать	slát'ʹ	послать	poslát'ʹ
<i>Present</i>	(я) шлю	shlyú	пошлю	pashlyú
	(онъ) шлётъ	shlyót	пошлётъ	pashlyót
	(онѣ) шлютъ	shlyút	пошлютъ	pashlyút
<i>Past</i>	слалъ	slal	послалъ	poslál
<i>Imperative</i>	шли́те	shlyíte	пошли́те	pashlyíte

There is another equally common form of the *imperfective*: *посыла́ть*, which is conjugated like *чита́ть*, and is used more in the frequentative sense.

### Present

Шлю вамъ при сѣмъ <sup>1</sup> рекоменда́тельное письмо́.

*I enclose (am sending with this) a letter of introduction.*

Шлю вамъ тёплый (сердѣчный) привѣтъ и жму ва́шу рѹку.

*I send you warm (heartly, affectionate, cordial) greeting and press your hand (ending a letter to an intimate friend or acquaintance. Жму is the present of жать = to press; жать (жну) = to reap).*

<sup>1</sup> This is the *masc. loc. sing.* of the almost obsolete pronoun сей, сѣя, сѣѣ; сѣѣ = *this*, which survives in a few expressions, cf. сего́дня (lit. *of this day*), сей-часъ and сѣѣ мину́ту = *immediately*.

На перекрёстки шлютъ старухъ. Pushkin

Посылаю ему́ каждый день газету́.  
*I send him a newspaper every day.*

**Future (Ipfv.)**

Я буду́ вамъ посылать деньги́ разъ въ мѣсяць.  
*I shall send you (the) money once a month.*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Когда вы мнѣ пошлѣте <sup>1</sup> эти́ книги́ ?  
*When will you send me these books ?*

Я вамъ ихъ пошлю́ завтра на вашу́ адресъ.  
*I will send them you to-morrow to your address.*

Вы пошлѣте <sup>1</sup> мнѣ свою́ карточку́ <sup>2</sup> ? Пошлю́.  
*Will you send me your photograph ? I will.*

**Past (Ipfv.)**

Я ей посылалъ каждый́ годъ подаро́къ.  
*I used to send her a present every year.*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Вы послали́ письмо́ ? Уже́ (or ещё не) посла́лъ.  
*Have you sent the letter ? I have already (or, not yet) sent it.*

Она послала́ <sup>3</sup> мнѣ свою́ карточку́.  
*She has sent me her photograph.*

Скажи, ... что полкъ въ походѣ послали III *Летний*

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Не посыла́йте ему́ больше́ ниче́го.  
*Don't send him anything more.*

<sup>1</sup> Or пришлѣте, cf. p. 238.

<sup>2</sup> Sc. фотографическую к. or фотографію.

<sup>3</sup> Or прислала, cf. p. 238.

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Пошлите мнѣ эту книгу какъ можно скорѣе.

*Send me this book as soon as you possibly can.*

**Infinitive (Pfv. ; ipfv. seldom used)**

Куда послать вамъ это ?

*Where shall I send you this to (where am I to send it) ?*

Прошу васъ послать мнѣ немедленно по почтѣ слѣдующія книги.

*Please send me without delay the following books by post.*

Я хочу послать это письмо заказнымъ.

*I want to send this letter registered (predicative instrumental).*

Можно послать эту посылку (этотъ пакетъ) наложеннымъ платежѣмъ.

*(You) can send this parcel to be paid for on delivery.*

From this verb are derived, amongst others, the following :

- 1 Отсылать (*ipfv.*), отослать (*pfv.*) = to send away, off.
- 2 Пересылать (*ipfv.*), переслать (*pfv.*) = to send on, forward.
- 3 *5. Pfv. is used*  
Присылать (*ipfv.*), прислать (*pfv.*) = to send to ; this verb is used just as commonly as посылать, послать, and is especially used to imply the receipt of anything which has been sent, e.g. онъ мнѣ прислалъ, она намъ прислала = he has sent me (and I have received), she has sent us (and we have received).  
Посылка (*f.*) = a parcel.
- 4 Ссылать (*ipfv.*), сослать (*pfv.*) = to exile ; used reflexively + на + acc. = to refer to, to quote from. Ссылка (*f.*) = exile ; a reference, quotation.

- 5 Выслать *imp.* выслатъ (-илъ) to send out.
5. "она насъ выслала вперѣдъ" *Тучков.*
3. "Привѣтъ прощальный мнѣ пришлѣтъ" *Лермонтов.*  
- will send me greetings of farewell.

## CHAPTER 73

TO RECEIVE, TO GET (transitive): ПОЛУЧА́ТЬ,  
ПОЛУЧИ́ТЬ

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	получа́ть	paluchá't'	получи́ть	paluchít'
<i>Present</i>	(я) получа́ю	palucháyu	получу́	paluchú
	(онъ) получа́етъ	palucháyet	получи́тъ	palúchit
	(онѣ) получа́ютъ	palucháyut	получа́тъ	palúchat
<i>Past</i>	(онъ) получа́лъ	paluchál	получи́лъ	paluchíl
<i>Imperative</i>	[получа́йте	palucháíte]	получи́те	paluchíteye

**Present**

Вы получа́ете ча́сто извѣстїя изъ Россїи ?

*Do you often get news from Russia ?*

Я получа́ю почти́ ка́ждый день письмо́ отъ него́.

*I get a letter from him almost every day.*

**Future** (*Pfv.* ; *ipfv.* not often required)

Вы за́втра навѣ́рно полу́чите отъ нея́ телегра́мму.

*To-morrow you will certainly get a wire from her.*

Когда́ я полу́чу́ кни́ги кото́рыя я заказáлъ ?

*When shall I get the books which I (have) ordered ?*

Я ду́маю, что ско́ро полу́чу отъ него́ письмо́.

*I think I shall soon have a letter from him.*

**Past** (*Pfv.* ; *ipfv.* seldom used)

Я сего́дня полу́чилъ письмо́ изъ Лондо́на.

*I have to-day received a letter from London.*

Я получилъ письмо́ отъ его́ сестры́ изъ Англии.  
*I have received a letter from his sister from England.*

Мы получили́ отъ нихъ безпрóволочную телеграмму.  
*We have received from them a wireless telegram.*

Она́ то́лько что получи́ла отъ него́ повѣстку.  
*She has just received a note from him.*

### Imperative (Pfv.)

Получи́те (sc. дѣньги) !

*Take the money!* (lit. *receive*), the usual phrase in paying the bill.

### Infinitive (Pfv. ; ipfv. little used)

Гдѣ́ я могу́ получи́ть такую́ бума́гу, такіе конвѣрты, такіа черни́ла, тако́е перо́ ?

*Where can I get paper, envelopes, ink, a pen like this ?*

### Cognate words

Получѣніе (n.)=*the act of receiving.* A receipt is квити́нція or распис́ка.

## CHAPTER 74

*TO RUN* : БѢЖА́ТЬ, БѢГА́ТЬ ; *TO FLY* : ЛЕТЕ́ТЬ,  
 ЛЕТА́ТЬ

There are several other verbs which (like *идти́* and *ходи́ть*, *ѣхать* and *ѣзди́ть*, &c., cf. pp. 74, 91) have two forms of the *Imperfective*, one for denoting an action actually in progress, another for denoting a frequentative, habitual, or potential activity (cf. pp. 74, 91). Amongst the commonest are the two following verbs, both of which are here given in full in their *actual* form (*бѣжа́ть* is one of the few irregular verbs, the 1st person singular and 3rd person



plural belonging to the e-class of endings, all the rest to the n-class) because these forms are far commoner and are more difficult to remember than the frequentative or potential forms of the same verbs, given below, which are conjugated exactly like думать, cf. p. 22.

<i>Run</i>		<i>Fly</i>	
<i>Actual Imperfective</i>		<i>Actual Imperfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>			
бѣжѣть	b(y)ezhá't'	летѣть	lyetyé't'
<i>Present</i>			
(я) бѣгú	b(y)egú	лечú	lyechú
(ты) бѣжѣшь <sup>1</sup>	b(y)ezhýsh <sup>1</sup>	летишь	lyetyísh
(онъ) бѣжѣтъ <sup>1</sup>	b(y)ezhýt <sup>1</sup>	летитъ	lyetyít
(мы) бѣжѣмъ <sup>1</sup>	b(y)ezhým <sup>1</sup>	летимъ	lyetyím
(вы) бѣжѣте <sup>1</sup>	b(y)ezhýtye <sup>1</sup>	летите	lyetyítýe
(онѣ) бѣгúтъ	b(y)egút	летѣтъ	lyetyát
<i>Past</i>			
(онъ) бѣжѣлъ	b(y)ezhál	летѣлъ	lyetyé'ál
<i>Imperative</i>			
бѣгите	b(y)egítýe	летите	lyetyítýe
<i>Potential Imperfective</i>		<i>Potential Imperfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>			
бѣгать	byé'agat'	летѣть	lyetá't'
<i>Present</i>			
(я) бѣгаю	byé'agayu	летаю	lyetáyu
(онъ) бѣгаетъ	byé'agayet	летѣтъ	lyetáyet
(онѣ) бѣгають	byé'agayut	летѣютъ	lyetáyut
<i>Past</i>			
(онъ) бѣгалъ	byé'gal	летѣлъ	lyetál
<i>Imperative</i>			
бѣгайте	byé'gaitýe	летѣйте	lyetáitýe

<sup>1</sup> н after ж=ы (y), cf. p. 2.

1809.1

Богумъ и Будама сонный брегъ Тушеф. I

БѢЖАТЬ = *actually to run along*,<sup>1</sup> БѢГАТЬ = *to be able to run about, to do so often or aimlessly*. ЛЕТАТЬ = *actually to fly along*, ЛЕТАТЬ = *to be able to fly, to do so often or aimlessly*.

The ordinary perfectives of these verbs are :

побѣжать = *to run a short distance, to run off, away*.

полетѣть = *to fly a short distance, to fly off, away*.

There is, further, a perfective verb : сбѣгать, which means *to run and come back quickly, to run round with a message or to get something*; cf. the perfective verbs : сходитьъ and съѣздить, pp. 74, 91.

Perfective verbs also exist from the others, but they are not nearly so common :

побѣгать = *to run hither and thither for a bit*.

полетать = *to fly about for a short time*.

Examples of the first six verbs are now given :

### Present

бѣгú (from бѣжать)—лечú (from летѣть)

Вотъ бѣжитъ мальчикъ. Лошадь бѣжитъ по полю.

*There is a boy running along. A horse is running across the field.*

Куда бѣгутъ люди? Бѣгú, бѣгú!

*Where are the people running to? I am coming (sc. hurrying)!*

Вотъ летитъ аэропланъ (воздушный корабль)!

*There is an aeroplane (airship) flying!*

Что это за <sup>2</sup> большая птица летитъ сюда?

*Of what sort is that big bird flying this way?*

<sup>1</sup> Also = *to flee, to take flight*.

<sup>2</sup> This phrase is always followed by the *nominative*; alternative equivalents are : это ка́кая (or ка́кого рѣда) пти́ца? cf. *F.R.V.*, pp. 84, 103.

Вода черезъ греблю бѣжитъ XIV А.Т.

Къ нему и птица не летитъ. IV Руск

Джигиты наши въ бой летятъ VI 5

бѣгаю (from бѣгать)—летаю (from летать)

Лѣтомъ дѣти бѣгаютъ весь день на открытомъ вѣздухѣ.  
*In summer the children run about all day in the open air.*

Куда вы такъ часто бѣгаете ?

*Where do you keep running (going) off to so often ?*

Вы летаете ? Сегѡдня летаютъ.

*Do you (sc. can you) fly ? There is an exhibition of flying to-day.*

**Future (Ipfv.)**

Буду is not commonly used with any of these verbs.

**Future (Pfv.)**

побѣгú (from побѣжать)—сбѣгаю (from сбѣгать)—  
 полечú (from полетѣть)

Я побѣгú туда, а затѣмъ побѣгú назадъ сюда.

*I shall run over there, and will then run back here.*

Я побѣгú (or сбѣгаю) на почту съ ѣтими писъмамн.

*I shall run to the post-office with these letters.*

Я сбѣгаю въ винную лавку за виномъ.

*I shall run round to the wine-shop for the wine.*

Какъ только получú телеграмму, я полечú туда.

*As soon as I get a wire, I shall dash off there.*

**Past (Ipfv.)**

бѣжалъ (from бѣжать)—летѣлъ (from летѣть)

Лошадь бѣжала (крупной, мелкой) рысью.

*The horse was running along at a (full, jog-) trot.*

Автомобиль (пѡездъ) летѣлъ. Сани летѣли.

*The motor (the train) flew along. The sledge was flying along.*

бѣгаль (from бѣгать)—леталь (from летать)

На берегу моря дѣти бѣгали по песку<sup>1</sup> босикомъ.

*At the seaside the children ran about on the sand barefoot.*

Вы когда-нибудь летали ?

*Have you ever been up in an aeroplane ?*

### Past (Pfv.)

побѣжаль (from побѣжать)—полетѣль (from полетѣть)

Какъ только услышали крикъ, мы побѣжали къ рѣкѣ.

*As soon as we heard the shout, we ran off to the river.*

Какъ только получила извѣстie, она къ нему полетѣла.

*As soon as she got the news, she flew off to him.*

### Imperative (Ipfv.)

бѣгите (from бѣжать)<sup>2</sup>

Бѣгите скорѣе, человекъ тонетъ !

*Come quickly, there 's a man drowning !*

бѣгайте (from бѣгать)<sup>2</sup>

Не бѣгайте такъ часто туда.

*Don't keep going there so often.*

### Imperative (Pfv.)<sup>2</sup>

побѣгите (from побѣжать)—сбѣгайте (from сбѣгать)

Побѣгите помóчь ему (ей, имъ), это очень тяжело.

*Run and help him (her, them), that is very heavy.*

Сбѣгайте на почту, пожалуйста, за марками.

*Just run round to the post, please, for some stamps.*

<sup>1</sup> *nom. песокъ (m.).*

<sup>2</sup> The imperatives of летѣть, летать and полетѣть are used in a similar way.

**Infinitive** (*Impv.*)

бѣжать—летѣть

These infinitives are very seldom used in their simple forms.

бѣгать—летать

Дѣти любятъ бѣгать. Мнѣ не хочется летать.

*Children like running about. I have no wish to fly.*

What has been said about the verbs идти and ѣхать (cf. pp. 73, 90) applies also to these verbs in the following way. These verbs, like those, describe the actual motion (of running and flying) without defining the direction, which may be either towards or away from the speaker. With these verbs in their simple form, as with those, the direction must be defined by adverbs or other words :

Онъ идётъ сюда.

*He is walking in this direction, is coming along.*

Она́ идётъ туда.

*She is walking in that direction, is going there.*

Онѣ сегодня ѣдутъ къ намъ ; — къ вамъ.

*They are coming (driving) to see us to-day ; they are going (driving) to see you to-day.*

Куда вы бѣжите ? Ребѣнокъ бѣжитъ къ матери.

*Where are you running to ? The child runs (is running) to its mother.*

Надъ нами летитъ орёлъ.

*An eagle is flying (about) above us (over our heads).*

Ястребъ (кóршунъ) летитъ надъ курятникомъ.

*A hawk (a kite) is flying about above the poultry-house.*

## CHAPTER 75

## THE COMPOUNDS OF THESE VERBS

In contrast to these *imperfective* verbs бѣж́ать and летѣ́ть, the *perfective* verbs побѣж́ать and полетѣ́ть, like пойт́и and поѣх́ать, imply rather *running off (away)*, *flying off (away)*, or *starting off running or flying*. In order to express the specific idea of *motion towards any one or anything*, the preposition при is prefixed to these verbs, just as in the case of the verbs приход́ить and прійт́и, приѣзж́ать and приѣх́ать, and the other prepositions are similarly prefixed, each lending its own specific meaning to the verb, e.g. убѣж́ать = *to run away*, улетѣ́ть = *to fly away* (cf. уйт́и = *to go away*, уѣх́ать = *to depart*, pp. 86, 103).

It will be remembered that *actual imperfective* verbs like итт́и and ѣх́ать, when compounded with prepositions, become *perfective*, viz. прійт́и and приѣх́ать, and that *potential imperfective* verbs like ход́ить compounded with the same prepositions remain *imperfective*, viz. приход́ить (as regards приѣзж́ать cf. p. 100). In the same way with these verbs, the compounds of the *actual imperfective* verbs бѣж́ать and летѣ́ть become *perfective* with a difference of meaning given by the preposition, while the compounds of the *potential imperfectives* бѣѓать and лет́ать remain *imperfective*, the same preposition also giving them the same difference of meaning. It must be specially noted that in the compounds of бѣѓать (*imperfectives*) the accent is throughout shifted to the next syllable, -бѣѓать.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The verb сбѣѓать (cf. p. 242) which is a *perfective* verb of anomalous formation is excepted.

Облетѣть его душа просится? <sup>25/11</sup> Koltsov

The following table will help to make this clear :

<i>Potential Imperfective</i>		<i>Actual Imperfective</i>
ходѣть	<i>go, come</i>	ити́
ѣздить	<i>go, come</i>	ѣхать
носѣть	<i>carry</i>	нести́
возѣть	<i>convey</i>	везти́
водѣть	<i>lead</i>	вести́
бѣгать	<i>run</i>	бѣжать
летѣть	<i>fly</i>	летѣть
<i>Imperfective</i> (with specific meaning)		<i>Perfective</i> (with specific meaning)
приходить	<i>come</i>	прійти́
(прѣѣзжать)	<i>arrive</i>	прѣехать
приносить	<i>bring</i>	принести́
привозить	<i>bring</i>	привезти́
приводить	<i>bring</i>	привести́
N. В. прибѣгать	<i>run up to</i>	прибѣжать
прилетѣть	<i>fly up to</i>	прилетѣть

There follow examples of some of the commonest compounds of these four verbs, *imperfectives* in -бѣгать and -летѣть, *perfectives* in -бѣжать and -летѣть. These being verbs of motion they illustrate particularly clearly the primary meanings of the prepositions in composition. The verbs are not given in full, as the infinitives are not often used in literature or in conversation.

Мальчикъ выбѣжалъ въ комнату = *the boy ran into the room.*

Дѣвочка выбѣжала изъ комнаты = *the little girl ran out of the room.*

Дѣти всё бѣгали и выбѣгали (*imperfective*).

*The children kept on running in and out.*

Онъ взбѣжалъ по лѣстницѣ.

*He ran up the stairs.*

Мы добѣжали до угла́ этой у́лицы.

*We ran as far as the corner of this street.*

Соба́ка перебѣжала́ че́резъ у́лицу.

*The dog ran across the street.*

Послѣ́ ученія́ дѣти́ скорѣ́е побѣжали́ домо́й.

*After lessons the children ran off home at full speed.*

Онъ далъ свистокъ, и соба́ка тотча́съ къ нему́ прибѣжала́.

*He gave a whistle, and the dog at once ran to him.*

Онѣ́ пробѣжали́ ми́мо насъ. Я пробѣжалъ́ эту́ кни́гу.

*They ran past us. I have run through this book.*

Онъ сбѣжалъ́ съ лѣстницы́ (съ горы́).<sup>1</sup>

*He ran down (off) the stairs (the hill).<sup>1</sup>*

Соба́ка убѣжала́ въ лѣсъ.

*The dog ran (or has run) away (right off) into the forest.*

и *спусту захватя, пустила, улетела* XV Туча  
 (This verb is more emphatic than побѣжать, which means  
 to run off, to set off at a run.)

Two other compounds of this verb deserve notice ; they are :

Избѣ́гать (*ipfv.*), избѣ́жать and избѣ́гнуть (*pfv.* ; *pres.* избѣ́гну, избѣ́гнетъ, избѣ́гнуть, *past* избѣ́гнулъ, избѣ́гнула, избѣ́гнули от избѣ́гъ, избѣ́гла, избѣ́гли) = *to avoid.*

Прибѣ́гать (*ipfv.*), прибѣ́гнуть (*pfv.* ; like избѣ́гнуть) = *to have recourse to* (къ).

Въ ко́мнату влетѣ́лъ воробѣ́й.

*A sparrow has flown into the room.*

Го́лубь взлетѣ́лъ <sup>2</sup> на дере́во.

*The dove (or pigeon) flew up <sup>2</sup> into the tree.*

<sup>1</sup> N.B. *to go downhill* is : итти́ по́дъ-гору́.

<sup>2</sup> This verb also means *to fly in pieces, to explode, to be blown up.*

Онъ испу́тче взлетѣ́вшія́ утки... XIV А.Т



Чи́жъ (ог чи́жикъ) вы́летѣла изъ клі́тки.

*The siskin<sup>1</sup> has flown out of the cage.*

До како́го мѣста они́ долетѣли ?

*How far did they get in their flight ?*

Сова́ перелетѣла че́резъ доро́гу.

*An owl flew across the road.*

Тѣ́теревъ полетѣ́лъ въ лѣ́съ.

*The woodcock flew off into the forest.*

Скворе́цъ подлетѣ́лъ къ окну́.

*A starling has flown close up to the window.*

Жа́воронокъ прилетѣ́лъ къ клі́ткѣ ((k)hklyétkye).

*A lark flew up to the cage.*

Дроздъ пролетѣ́лъ ми́мо окна́.

*A thrush flew past the window.*

Воро́ны<sup>2</sup> и во́роны<sup>3</sup> разлетѣ́лись въ ра́зныя сто́роны.

*The crows and the ravens flew off in different directions.*

Соро́ка слетѣ́ла съ де́рева.

*The magpie flew down from off the tree.*

Ласточ́ки улетѣ́ли въ те́плый край.

*The swallows have flown away to a warm country.*

<sup>1</sup> A sort of finch.

<sup>2</sup> *Nom. sing.* воро́на (*f.*).

<sup>3</sup> *Nom. sing.* во́ронъ (*m.*).

*вы-летѣть flight. на во́семь right through.*

## CHAPTER 76

## TO SWIM, TO FLOAT: ПЛЫТЬ, ПЛАВАТЬ

This verb also has two forms of the *imperfective* :

Плыть (*pres.* плыву́, плывё́тъ, плыву́тъ, *past* плы́лъ, плы́ла, плы́ли, *imper.* плыви́те) is the actual imperfective and means *to go or be on the water, to sail, to navigate, to float on the water.*

Пла́вать (conjugated like дѣ́лать, cf. p. 251) is the potential imperfective and means *to swim and also to sail habitually, to float about.*

Мы плы́ли вверхъ (внизъ) по рѣ́кѣ́ (на паруса́хъ <sup>1</sup>) на вѣсла́хъ <sup>2</sup> (въ откры́томъ мо́рѣ́) по о́зеру.

*We sailed (or were sailing) up (down) stream (by sail) rowing (in the open sea) over the lake.*

Вы пла́ваете (ог умѣ́ете пла́вать)? = *can you swim?*

Онъ пла́ваетъ = *he is afloat.* Compounds of ПЛЫТЬ are *perfective*, and the corresponding *imperfectives* are formed with an infinitive -ПЛАВА́ТЬ (like чита́тъ) :

Доплыва́тъ (*ipfv.*), доплы́тъ (*pfv.*) = *to swim, sail, or float as far as (до).*

Пере́плыва́тъ (*ipfv.*), пере́плы́тъ (*pfv.*) = *to swim or sail across (че́резъ)*; онъ пере́плы́лъ че́резъ ф́инскій за́ливъ = *he swam (or sailed) across the gulf of Finland.*

Other compounds are formed as in chapter 75.

*To drown, to sink*

Тону́тъ (conjugated like тяну́тъ, cf. p. 21) and потопáтъ (both *ipfv.*), утону́тъ and потону́тъ (*pfv.*) = *to drown, to sink (INTRANSITIVE).*

Топи́тъ (conjugated like топи́тъ, cf. pp. 284-5 and потопля́тъ (both *ipfv.*), потопи́тъ (*pfv.*) = *to drown, to sink (TRANSITIVE).*

<sup>1</sup> *Nom. sing.* па́русъ (*m.*)

<sup>2</sup> *Nom. sing.* весло́ (*n.*)

## CHAPTER 77

TO DO (to make) : ДѢЛАТЬ, СДѢЛАТЬ

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	дѢЛАТЬ	dyé <sup>a</sup> lat'	сдѢЛАТЬ	sdyé <sup>a</sup> lat'
<i>Present</i>	(я) дѢЛАЮ	dyé <sup>a</sup> layu	сдѢЛАЮ	sdyé <sup>a</sup> layu
	(онъ) дѢЛАЕТЪ	dyé <sup>a</sup> layet	сдѢЛАЕТЪ	sdyé <sup>a</sup> layet
	(онѣ) дѢЛАЮТЪ	dyé <sup>a</sup> layut	сдѢЛАЮТЪ	sdyé <sup>a</sup> layut
<i>Past</i>	(онъ) дѢЛАЛЪ	dyé <sup>a</sup> lal	сдѢЛАЛЪ	sdyé <sup>a</sup> lal
<i>Imperative</i>	дѢЛАЙТЕ	dyé <sup>a</sup> laitye	сдѢЛАЙТЕ	sdyé <sup>a</sup> laitye

**Present**

Что вы дѢлаете ? Я ничего не дѢлаю.

*What are you doing ? I am doing nothing.*

Что вы дѢлаете сегодня вечеромъ ? (illogical use).

*What are you doing this evening ?*

**Future (Ipfv.)**

Что вы будете тамъ дѢлать ?

*What shall you do there ?*

Завтра я ничего не буду дѢлать.

*To-morrow I am not going to do anything.*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Когда вы это для меня сдѢлаете ?

*When will you do this for me ?*

Я это сдѢлаю завтра непременно.

*I will do this to-morrow without fail.*

**Conditional** (*Pfv.* ; *ipfv.* seldom used)

На вашемъ мѣстѣ я бы этого не сдѣлалъ.

*In your place I should not do (or have done) this.*

Еслибы я могъ, я бы это сдѣлалъ съ большимъ удовольствіемъ.

*If I had been able, I should have done this with great pleasure.*

**Imperative** (*Ipfv.*)

Ради Бѳга, не дѣлайте этого !

*For God's sake don't do that !*

Не дѣлайте ему вреда !

*Don't do him any harm !*

**Imperative** (*Pfv.*)

Сдѣлайте, какъ хотѣте !

*Do as you like !*

Сдѣлайте (мнѣ) одолженіе !

*Do me the favour !*

(A phrase used on requesting, and also on granting, a favour, such as borrowing or lending a book to look at handing a dish, &c.)

**Infinitive** (*Ipfv.*)

Что дѣлать ? Нечего дѣлать (ог дѣлать нечего).

*What is to be done ? There is nothing to be done.*

Ничего не дѣлать.

*To do nothing* (notice the difference between нечего and ничего не).

**Infinitive** (*Pfv.*)

Сдѣлать это для васъ ? Это можно сдѣлать.

*Shall I do that for you ? One can do that.*

~~Раш (Pfv)~~

Не сдѣлалъ бы многого я. X X А.Т

Я (не) хочú это сдѣлать. Это трудно (легко) сдѣлать.  
*I (don't) want to do that. That is difficult (easy) to do.*

*To pay any one a call or a visit* = дѣлать, сдѣлать визитъ (кому) : я не люблю визиты дѣлать = *I don't like paying calls*, надо сдѣлать имъ визитъ сегодня (or пойти къ нимъ съ визитомъ) = *(we) must go and call on them to-day.*

Дѣлаться, сдѣлаться = *to become*, and is very often used instead of становиться, стать (cf. p.120), e.g. :

Больному (больной) дѣлается хуже.

*The patient is becoming worse.*

For further examples, cf. p. 125.

An amplified form of the *imperfective* дѣлать is подѣлывать, very common in certain phrases, such as :

Что вы подѣлываете ?

*How are you getting on, what are you up to, what have you been doing lately ?*

#### Cognate words

Дѣло = *affair, business, matter* ; это не ваше дѣло = *that is not your business* ; у меня столько дѣла ! = *I have so much to do !* онъ здѣсь по дѣламъ = *he is here on business* ; въ чемъ дѣло ? = *what's the trouble ?* дѣло въ томъ, что . . . = *the trouble is that . . .* ; въ томъ-то и дѣло ! = *that's just the point !*

[*Work* is : работа ; *to work* : работать (conjugated like дý-мать) ; *a workman* : рабочій, работникъ.]

## CHAPTER 78

TO PERMIT : ПОЗВОЛЯТЬ, ПОЗВОЛИТЬ

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	позволять	razvalyáit'	позво́лить	razvólýt'
<i>Present</i>	(я) позволя́ю	razvalyáyu	позво́лю	razvólyu
	(онъ) позволя́етъ	razvalyáyet	позво́литъ	razvólýt
	(онѣ) позволя́ютъ	razvalyáyut	позво́лятъ	razvólýat
<i>Past</i>	(онъ) позволя́лъ	razvalyál	позво́лилъ	razvólýil
<i>Imperative</i>	позволя́йте	razvalyáitye	позво́льте	razvól'tye

**Present**

Вы это позволяете ? Это не позво́ляется.  
*Do you allow this ? That is not allowed.*

Моё здоро́вье этого не позволя́етъ.  
*My health does not permit this.*

Никому́ не позволя́ютъ входи́ть туда́.  
*They allow no one to enter there.*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Я вамъ не позво́лю это сдѣлать ;—уйти́.  
*I shall not allow you to do this ;—to go away.*

Вы мнѣ позво́лите кури́ть (закури́ть) ?  
*Will you permit me to smoke (to have a smoke) ?*

До́кторъ мнѣ не позво́литъ ѣхать.  
*The doctor won't allow me to travel.*

Вамъ не позволѣть уѣхать сегодня.  
*They won't allow you to leave to-day.*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Докторъ сегодня позволѣлъ мнѣ пойти гулять.  
*The doctor has allowed me to go for a walk to-day.*

Больному сегодня позволѣли вставать.  
*They allowed the patient (m.) to get up to-day.*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Позволѣте спросить васъ ;—сказать вамъ.  
*Permit me to ask you ;—to tell you.*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Я не могу себѣ этого позволѣть.  
*I cannot permit myself that.*

**Cognate expressions**

Позволѣніе (*n.*)=*permission* (cf. pp. 181, 271) ; съ вѣшаго позво-  
 лѣнія=*with* (lit. *from*) *your permission.*

Позволѣно=*it is permitted.*

Дозволяется, дозволѣно=*it is permitted.*

Не дозволяется, не дозволѣно=*it is forbidden.*

Изволѣте !=*be so good, if you please !*

The imperative of дать is also used for *permit*, cf. p. 183.

## CHAPTER 79

TO LET (GO), ALLOW : ПУСКАТЬ, ПУСТИТЬ  
THROW.

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	пускать	puská't'	пустить	pus'tít'
<i>Present</i>	(я) пускаю	puskáyu	пущу́	pushchú
	(онъ) пускаетъ	puskáyet	пúститъ	pústyit
	(онѣ) пускаютъ	puskáyut	пúстятъ	pústyat
<i>Past</i>	(онъ) пускалъ	puskál	пустилъ	pustyíl
<i>Imperative</i>	пускайте	puskáitye	пустите	pustyít'ye

**Present**

Онѣ меня не пускаютъ. Тудá не пускаютъ.  
*They won't let me go. They don't allow one to go there.*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Васъ не пúстятъ. Я васъ не пущу́.  
*They won't let you go (sc. out or in). I shan't let you go.*

**Past (Ipfv.)**

Докторá къ нему́ никогó не пускали.  
*The doctors would not allow any one to go to him.*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Мáльчикъ пустилъ птíцу. Васъ пустили ?  
*The boy let the bird go. Did they let you (sc. in or out) ?*

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Не пускайте егó ! Пúскай !  
*Don't let him go ! Let it be !*

«И, смóгу захватя́, пусти́ла, зубьлáя  
 въ прекрáсное дитя́. Турков. XV



**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Пусти́те меня́ !

*Let me go !***Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Я не хочу́ пусти́ть васъ. На́до пусти́ть.

*I don't want to let you go. (You) must let go.*

The reflexive form of this verb in the past is often used :

Онъ пусти́лся бѣжать. Мы пусти́лись въ путь.

*He set off at a run. We set off on our journey.*

The imperatives пуска́й and пусть (N.B. *not* пусти́) are used, followed by the perfective future, to express the 3rd person singular and plural imperative of *any* verb, as in English *let*, e.g.

Пуска́й придётъ за́втра ! Пустьъ бу́детъ такъ !

*Let him come to-morrow ! Let it be like that !***Compound verbs**

- 1 Впуска́ть (*ipfv.*), впустить (*pfv.*) = *to admit, inject.*
- 2 Выпуска́ть, выпустить = *to release, let out*; выпу́скъ (*m.*) = *part, number (of a book or journal).*
- 3 Допуска́ть, допустить = *to permit, to admit.*
- 4 Запуска́ть, запустить = *to neglect.*
- 5 Испуска́ть, испустить = *to emit.*
- 6 Напуска́ть, напустить = *to let on, set on.*
- 7 Опуска́ть, опустить = *to let down, let fall, let drop (e.g. a letter into the box).*
- 8 Отпуска́ть, отпустить = *to dismiss*; отпу́скъ (*m.*) = *furlough.*
- 9 Подпуска́ть, подпустить = *to let approach.*
- 10 Попуска́ть, попустить = *to allow.*
- 11 Припуска́ть, припустить = *to admit.*
- 12 Пропуска́ть, пропустить = *to omit, miss out, let pass, let through.*
- 13 Пропу́скъ (*m.*) = *a pass*, пропу́ска́я бума́га (*f.*) = *blotting-paper.*
- 14 Распуска́ть, распустить = *to dissolve, let loose, let go.*
- 15 Спуска́ть, спустить = *to let down, lower*; спу́скъ (*m.*) = *a slope.*
- 16 ————— ся, — ся = *to go down, descend.*

1809.1

S

8. Ты очи опустила... ты опустила вьегда. X А.Т.
6. Спускается солнце за степи XIII А.Т.
6. сорочка лёгкая спустилась Pustekin. 8.

## CHAPTER 80

TO FORBID: ЗАПРЕЩАТЬ, ЗАПРЕТИТЬ

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	запещать	zapreshchát'	запретить	zapretyít'
<i>Present</i>	(я) запещаю	zapreshcháyu	запещу	zapreshchú
	(онъ) запещаетъ	zapreshcháyet	запретитъ	zapretyít
	(онѣ) запещаютъ	zapreshcháyut	запретятъ	zapretyát
<i>Past</i>	(онъ) запещалъ	zapreshchál	запретилъ	zapretyíl
<i>Imperative</i>	запещайте	zapreshcháitye	запретите	zapretyitye

In public notices this verb often appears in the form *воспещать*, and is frequently used reflexively, e.g.

**Present**

Курить и пещать строго *воспещается*.

*It is strictly forbidden to smoke and to spit.*

Постороннимъ входъ *воспещается*.

*Admittance only on business (lit. to outsiders entrance is forbidden).*

Запещаю вамъ говорить объ этомъ.

*I forbid you to speak about this.*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Докторъ навѣрно *запретитъ* вамъ курить.

*The doctor will certainly forbid you to smoke.*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Докторъ *запретилъ* мнѣ ѣхать ;—ходить.

*The doctor has forbidden me to travel ;—to walk.*

Емý запретили итти (ог ѣхать) ко мнѣ.  
*They have forbidden him to come to me.*

**Cognate expressions**

Запрещено говорить. Входъ запрещёнъ.  
*Talking is forbidden. Entrance is forbidden.*

*To forbid* is often rendered also by the expression не велѣть = *not to command*, e.g.

Докторъ не велѣлъ мнѣ вставать;—выходить (ог выѣзжать);—ѣсть мясо.

*The doctor has forbidden me to get up;—to go out;—to eat meat.*

‘ Богъ лѣниться не велить.’

*God forbids us to be idle.*

## CHAPTER 81

*TO BEGIN* : НАЧИНАТЬ, НАЧАТЬ; *TO CONTINUE* :  
ПРОДОЛЖАТЬ

	<i>Imperfective</i>	<i>Perfective</i>		
<i>Infinitive</i>				
	начинать	nachiná't'	начать	nachá't'
<i>Present</i>				
(я)	начинаю	nachináyu	начnú	nachnú
(онъ)	начинаетъ	nachináyet	начнёть	nachnyót
(онѣ)	начинаютъ	nachináyut	начнётъ	nachnúť
<i>Past</i>				
(онъ)	начиналъ	nachínál	началъ	náchal
(онá)		&c.	началá	nachalá
(онó)			начало	náchala
(онѣ)			начали	náchalyi
<i>Imperative</i>				
	начинайте	nachináitye	начните	nachnyítuye

This verb is transitive, but can be used intransitively if followed by an infinitive (e.g. *it is beginning to grow dark*); otherwise when used intransitively it requires the addition of the reflexive pronoun. In the reflexive past the accent is always on the last syllable.

### Present

Я сего́дня начина́ю но́вую кни́гу.  
*I am beginning a new book to-day.*

Начина́етъ смерка́ться ; нача́ло темне́ть.  
*It is beginning (it begins) to grow dark ; it has begun (it began) to grow dark.*

Дождь начина́етъ итти́.  
*It is beginning to rain.*

Конце́ртъ начина́ется въ полови́ну восьмо́го.  
*The concert begins at 7.30.*

Когда́ начина́ется представле́ние ?  
*When does the performance begin ?*

### Future

Когда́ вы начнёте́ эту рабо́ту ?  
*When shall you begin this work ?*

Я начну́ её за́втра непремѣ́нно.  
*I shall begin it to-morrow without fail.*

Скоро́ начнётся ; уже́ (давнó) началóсь.  
*It will soon begin ; it has already (long since) begun.*

### Past

Онъ нача́л спóрить ; спóрь начался́.  
*He began to argue ; the discussion began.*

Она́ началá говори́ть ; пьеса́ началась́.  
*She began (has begun) to speak ; the play has begun.*

С начала́ присоеди́няется къ мнѣ  
XII Туида

Нáчало свѣтлѣть ; ещё не началось.

*It began to grow light ; it has (had) not yet begun.*

Нáчали играть ; начались морозы.

*They began (have begun) to play ; the frosts have begun.*

### Imperative

Не начинайте безъ меня ! Начните сей-часъ !

*Don't begin without me (till I come) ! Begin immediately !*

### Cognate words

Начáло (*n.*) = *beginning* (also *principle*) ; съ начáла до концá = *from beginning to end* ; сначала = *at first* ; начáльный = *elementary* ; начальникъ = *head* (e.g. -стáнции *station-master*, — школы = *principal of a school*).

The verb *стать* (cf. pp. 121, 124) is often used with another infinitive in the sense of *to begin*, especially in narration, e.g.:

Вдругъ стáли стрѣлять.

*Suddenly they began to shoot.*

### To continue

Продолжáть (*ipfv.*), продлѣть (*pfv.*) ; these verbs can also be used reflexively just like начинáть, начáть.

Онъ продолжáетъ играть. Дóлго продолжáется.

*He continues to play. It goes on for a long time.*

Э́то бóдетъ ещё дóлго продолжáться ?

*Will that continue for a long time ?*

Какъ дóлго э́то ещё продлѣтся ?

*How much longer is this going to continue ?*

Продолжéние (*n.*) = *a continuation*.

Впродолжéнiе (отъ въ продолжéнiе) + *acc.* = *during*.

## CHAPTER 82

TO FINISH : КОНЧА́ТЬ, КОНЧИ́ТЬ (*to cease*, cf. p. 135)

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	конча́ть	kancháit'	кони́чь	kónchit'
<i>Present</i>	(я) конча́ю	kancháyu	кони́чу	kónchu
	(онъ) конча́етъ	kancháyet	кони́чь	kónchit
	(онѣ) конча́ютъ	kancháyut	кони́чатъ	kónchat
<i>Past</i>	(онъ) конча́лъ	kanchál	кони́ль	kónchil
<i>Imperative</i>	конча́йте	kancháitye	кони́те	kónchitye

This verb is *transitive*; when used *intransitively* the reflexive pronoun is added. The same applies to the very common derivative verbs, за- or оканчива́ть (*ipfv.*), за-, по-, or окони́чь (*pfv.*), *to finish off*.

**Present**

Представле́нiе конча́ется въ де́сять часо́въ.

*The performance finishes at 10 o'clock.*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Я кончу́ эту рабо́ту се́годня.

*I shall finish this work this morning.*

Чѣмъ это кончiтся? Ско́ро кончiтся?

*How will this end (lit. with what)? Will it soon be over?*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Вы ужé кóнчили эту кнѣгу ?  
*Have you finished this book already ?*

Концёртъ кóнчился óчень рáно.  
*The concert finished very early.*

Дѣло кóнчилось тѣмъ, что всѣ ушли.  
*The affair ended by everybody going off.*

Вы ужé кóнчили игрáть ?  
*Have you finished playing already ?*

**Imperative**

Кончáйте (ог кóнчите) скорѣе !  
*Be quick and finish !*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Нáдо кóнчить по-скорѣе !  
*It is necessary to finish (sc. what you are doing) quickly !*

Я хочú окóнчить это дѣло сего́дня.  
*I want to finish off this business to-day.*

Нáдо съ этимъ покóнчить.  
*We must put an end to this.*

**Cognate words**

Конéцъ (*m.*) = *end* ; съ начáла до концá = *from beginning to end*,  
 съ это́го (тогó) концá = *from this (that) end*, это безъ концá  
 = *it is endless*, подъ конéцъ = *towards the end*, къ концú  
 (*h-kantsú*) = *by the end*, въ концѣ концóвъ = *at (the very) last*,  
*finally* ; наконéцъ = *at last*, конéчно = *of course, naturally*.  
 Окончáние (*n.*) = *termination (of a word)*.

*To cease (cf. p. 135)*

## CHAPTER 83

TO CALL, BE CALLED: ЗВАТЬ, НАЗЫВАТЬ

*Imperfective**Infinitive*

звать zva't'

*Past*

(онъ) звалъ zval

*Present*

(она) звалá zvalá

(я) зову́ zavú

(они) звали́ zvalýi

(онъ) зовётъ zavuyót

*Imperative*

(они) зову́тъ zavúť

зовите zavítýe

*Perfective*

позвать razvá't'

позовите pazavítýe

**Present**

Она́ зовётъ насъ сегодня́ обѣдать у ней.

*She asks (lit. calls) us to dine at her house to-day.*

Какъ васъ зову́тъ? Какъ его́ зову́тъ?

*What do they call you? What is his name?*

Меня́ зову́тъ Я́ковомъ Я́ковлеви́чемъ.

*They call me (my name is) James, son of James.*

Я́ковъ = *James*, Я́ковлеви́чь = *James' son*, cf. *F.R.V.*,  
 ch. 13; the answer to such questions is usually in the  
 predicative instrumental.

A more polite form of inquiring a person's name is :

Какъ ва́ша фами́лія?

*What is your surname?*

Какъ ва́ше и́мя и о́тчество?

*What is your Christian name and patronymic?*

Всѣ съ собою́ зовѣмъ.

XVIII

Koltsov



In naming *objects* another form of this verb, given below, is always used.

### Future

Какъ бѹду готóвъ, я васъ позовѹ.

*As soon as I am ready I shall call you (lit. how I shall be).*

Какъ вы бѹдете егó звать ?

*What are you going to call him ?*

### Past

Онѹ звáли насъ ёто лѣто гостѹть у нихъ.

*They asked us to go and stay with them this summer.*

Собáку звáли Полкáномъ, а котá—Вáськой.

*The dog's name was Polkán, and the cat's—Basil.*

Поминáй какъ звáли !

*Remember how they called (him, sc. he vanished) !*

### Imperative

Позовѹте извóщика, пожалуйста !

*Call me a cab, please !*

### Infinitive

Позвáть вамъ таксамѣтру ?

*Shall I call you a taxi ?*

In naming *objects* the following verb is used :

### Imperfective

<i>Infinitive</i>	назывáть	nazyváit'
<i>Present</i>	назывáю	nazyváyu
<i>Impersonal</i>	назывáется	nazyváetsya

Какъ ёто назывáется ? Какъ ёто назывáютъ ?

*What is this called ? What do they call this ?*

Какъ назывáется ёто мѣсто ?

*What is the name of this place ?*

Называть used transitively is followed by the predicative instrumental ; the *perfective* назвать means to give a name to a person.

Какъ вы его назовёте ?

*What name will you give him ?*

Я назвалъ его Ивановъ.

*I have called him John.*

#### Cognate words

Названіе=*appellation, designation, name.*

Какъ названіе этой пьесы ?

*What is the name of this play ?*

## CHAPTER 84

TO ASK (QUESTIONS): СПРАШИВАТЬ, СПРОСИТЬ ;

TO INVITE: ПРИГЛАШАТЬ, ПРИГЛАСИТЬ

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>				
	спрашивать	spráshyvát'	спросить	sprásít'
<i>Present</i>				
	(я) спрашиваю	spráshyvayu	спрошú	sprashú
	(онъ) спрашиваетъ	spráshyvayet	спрósитъ	sprósit
	(онѣ) спрашиваютъ	spráshyvayut	спрósятъ	sprósyat
<i>Past</i>				
	(онъ) спрашивалъ	spráshyval	спросилъ	sprásil
<i>Imperative</i>				
	спрашивайте	spráshyvaitye	спросите	sprásitye

This verb is derived from просить (*pres. прошú*) = to beg, see chapter 85 ; for its formation, *imperfective* and *perfective*, cf. p. 37.

А если спроситъ кто-нибудь -  
Ну, кто бы ни спросилъ ? III *terminatio.*

**Present**

Вы о чёмъ (меня) спрашиваете ?

*What are you asking (me) about ?*

Что онъ меня спрашиваетъ ?

*What is he asking me ?*

Я спрашиваю у него совѣта (совѣтъ, *m.*).

*I am asking him for his advice (lit. at him of advice).*

Онъ спрашиваетъ у меня деньги ;—дѣнегъ.

*He is asking me for money ;—for some money.*

**Future (Ipfv.)**

Я не буду его спрашивать объ этомъ.

*I am not going to ask him questions about this.*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Я его спрошú, какъ намъ надо итти.

*I shall ask him which is our way (lit. how we are to go).*

Что я скажú, если меня спросятъ ?

*What shall I say, if they ask me ?*

Я никогó не спрошú. Навѣрно васъ спросятъ.

*I shall ask no one. They will certainly ask you.*

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Не спрашивайте у меня совѣта !

*Don't ask me for advice.*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Спросите его, онъ навѣрно знаетъ.

*Ask him, he certainly knows (sc. is sure to know).*

**Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

Не надо спрашивать.

*There is no need to ask, you must not ask.*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Надо когó-нибудь спросить. Можно спросить ?  
*(We) must ask some one. May I ask ?*

Я хочу спросить, сколько это стóитъ.  
*I want to ask how much that costs.*

Спросить мнѣ его ? Когó намъ спросить ?  
*Shall I ask him ? Whom are we to ask ?*

**Cognate words**

Распрашивать, спросить = *to cross-question.*

Вопросъ (*m.*) = *a question (to ask a question, cf. p. 138).*

Спросъ (*m.*) = *permission ; безъ спроса = without asking.*

**To ask (to invite)***Imperfective**Perfective**Infinitive*

	приглашáть	priglashá't'	пригласи́ть	priglasít'
--	------------	--------------	-------------	------------

*Present*

(я)	приглаша́ю	priglasháyu	приглашú	priglashú
-----	------------	-------------	----------	-----------

(онъ)	приглаша́етъ	priglasháyet	пригласи́тъ	priglasít
-------	--------------	--------------	-------------	-----------

(они́)	приглаша́ютъ	priglasháyut	приглася́тъ	priglasyát
--------	--------------	--------------	-------------	------------

*Past*

(онъ)	приглаша́лъ	priglashál	пригласи́лъ	priglasíl
-------	-------------	------------	-------------	-----------

*Imperative*

	приглаша́йте	priglasháitye	пригласи́те	priglasítye
--	--------------	---------------	-------------	-------------

**Present**

Они́ приглаша́ютъ насъ на обѣдъ сегодня.  
*They invite us to dinner to-day.*

**Future (Ipfv.)**

Они́ б́удутъ васъ ещё приглашáть.  
*They will invite you again (later on).*

**Future (Pfv.)**

Я приглашú егó позáвтракать сего́дня.  
*I shall ask him to lunch to-day.*

**Past (Ipfv.)**

Меня́ ча́сто приглаша́ли обѣдать.  
*They often used to ask me to dine.*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Они́ пригласи́ли насъ обѣдать у нихъ.  
*They have asked us to dine with them.*

(Ipfv.)

**Imperative**

(Pfv.)

Не приглаша́йте егó.  
*Don't ask him.*

Пригласи́те егó.  
*Ask him.*

**Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

Я люблю́ приглаша́ть ихъ въ гóсти.  
*I like asking them to come and see me.*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

Я хочú пригласи́ть егó у насъ погости́ть (ог, — егó къ намъ въ гóсти).  
*I want to ask him to come and stay with us.*

**Cognate words**

Приглаше́ние (*n.*) = invitation.

Го́лосъ (*m.*) = voice.

Согла́сие (*n.*) = agreement; соглаша́ться (*ipfv.*), согласи́ться (*pfv.*)  
 съ + inst. = to agree with. я съ ва́ми согласи́сь (*m.*, согласи́сьна, *f.*) = I agree with you; вы согласи́сьны? = do you agree?, are you willing? я на это́ не согласи́сь = I do not agree to this.

"Для чего на свете людство существует  
Область его душа просится. XVIII Koltsov

270

ПРОСИТЬСЯ = to ask for myself.  
to beg to go somewhere

## CHAPTER 85

TO ASK (REQUEST, BEG): ПРОСИТЬ, ПОПРОСИТЬ

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	просить	prasít'	попросить	raprasít'
<i>Present</i>				
(я) прошу́	prashú	попрошу́	raprashú	
(онъ) про́ситъ	prósit	попро́ситъ	raprósit	
(они́) про́сятъ	prósyat	попро́сятъ	raprósyat	
<i>Past</i>				
(онъ) проси́лъ	prasíl	попроси́лъ	raprasíl	
<i>Imperative</i>				
проси́те	prasít'ye	попроси́те	raprasít'ye	

### Present

Прошу́ васъ не беспоко́иться.

*I beg you not to disturb yourself, not to be alarmed.*

Прошу́ васъ садиться. Покорнѣйше прошу́.

*I beg you to be seated. I most humbly beg.*

Ни́щие про́сятъ у насъ мѣлостыни.

*The beggars are asking alms of us.*

Онъ про́ситъ меня́ переда́ть вамъ тёплый привѣтъ.

*He begs me to convey to you cordial greeting.*

### Future (Ipfv.)

Я не хочу́ проси́ть у него́ совѣта ;—дѣнегъ.

*I don't wish to ask him for advice ;—for money.*

### Future (Pfv.)

Я попрошу́ у него́ рекоменда́тельное письмо́.

*I shall ask him for a letter of introduction.*

**Past (Ipfv.)**

Вы просили у кого-нибудь совета? Нѣтъ, не просилъ.  
*Have you asked any one's advice? No, I haven't.*

Мы просили его сказать намъ.  
*We asked him to tell us.*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Я попросилъ у ней позволенія (or разрѣшенія).  
*I asked her permission.*

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Не просите больше, это напрасно.  
*Don't ask any more, it is no good.*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Попросите его прийти сегодня вечеромъ.  
*Ask him to come this evening.*

**Cognate words**

Прóсьба (*f.*) *request, favour :*

Прошѣнiе (*n.*) *petition ;* подать прошѣнiе=*to hand in a petition.*

У меня къ вамъ просьба.

*I have a favour to ask you (I have to you a request).*

Я къ вамъ съ просьбой.

*I (come) to you with a request.*

Запрашивать, запросить=*to ask too much (money).*

This verb must not be confused with :

прощать (*ipfv.*), простить (*pfv.*)=*to forgive, прощаться (ipfv.),*  
 проститься (*pfv.*)=*to say good-bye.*

In general прошу васъ is a more polite way of saying пожалуйста (*please*) and is very frequently used with the infinitive in this sense, e.g. :

Прошу васъ передать мнѣ . . .

*Please pass me (hand me) . . .*

Прошу переслать (at the top of envelopes).

*Please forward (send on).*

The formula for 'c/o' is expressed thus :

Его Высокоблагородію (Е.В.Б.).

Николáю Константíновичу Попóву

прошú передáть (ог, съ просьбой передáть)

Е.В.Б. Пáвлу Борíсовичу Смирнóву.

Paul Borísovich Smirnón, Esq.

c/o Nicholas Konstantínovich Porón, Esq.

Мíлости прóсимъ ! (lit. *we beg mercy*) is the commonest formula for *please come and see us* !

## CHAPTER 86

### TO ANSWER : ОТВѢЧАТЬ, ОТВѢТИТЬ

	<i>Imperfective</i>		<i>Perfective</i>	
<i>Infinitive</i>	отвѣчáть	atv(y)echá't'	отвѣтíть	atvyé'tyit'
<i>Present</i>	(я) отвѣчáю	atv(y)echáyu	отвѣчу	atvyé'chu
	(онъ) отвѣчáетъ	atv(y)echáyet	отвѣтíтъ	atvyé'tyet
	(онí) отвѣчáютъ	atv(y)echáyut	отвѣтíтъ	atvyé'tyat
<i>Past</i>	(онъ) отвѣчáль	atv(y)echál	отвѣтíлъ	atvyé'tyil
<i>Imperative</i>	отвѣчáйте	atv(y)echáitye	отвѣтíьте	atvyé't'ye

This verb takes the dative, also на + accusative. The *imperfective* past is often used, especially in narration, where the *perfective* past would be expected.

#### Present

Наконѣць-то я отвѣчáю на вáше письмó.

*Now at last I am answering your letter.*



Отчего вы не отвѣчаете на мой вопросъ ?

*Why don't you answer my questions ?*

Я ничего не понимаю, когда мнѣ отвѣчаютъ.

*I understand nothing when people answer me.*

Онъ мнѣ очень долго не отвѣчаетъ.

*He is a very long time in answering me.*

Что вы на это отвѣчаете ?

*What do you say in answer to this ?*

### Future (Ipfv.)

Не безпокойтесь, я буду за это отвѣчать.

*Don't be anxious, I shall answer for this.*

### Future (Pfv.)

Я не знаю, что я на это отвѣчу.

*I don't know what I shall say in answer to this.*

Я отвѣчу вамъ завтра непременно.

*I shall answer you to-morrow without fail.*

Когда вы мнѣ отвѣтите на мой вопросъ ? скоро ?

*When will you answer my question ? soon ?*

### Past (Ipfv.)

Онъ мнѣ отвѣчалъ, что не можетъ прийти.

*He answered me that he couldn't come.*

Она мнѣ долго ничего не отвѣчала.

*For a long time she answered me nothing.*

### Past (Pfv.)

Что вы имъ отвѣтили ? Я ни слова не отвѣтилъ.

*What did you answer them ? I didn't answer a word.*

Она́ мнѣ ещё не отвѣтила на моё письмо́.  
*She has not yet answered my letter.*

Они́ вамъ (ужё) отвѣтили ?  
*Have they answered you (already) ?*

**Imperative (Ipfv.)**

Отвѣчайте скорѣе на всѣ мои́ вопро́сы.  
*Answer all my questions as soon as possible.*

Лучше не отвѣчайте ей́ ниче́го.  
*Better not answer her anything.*

**Imperative (Pfv.)**

Пожáлуйста отвѣ́тите сей-ча́съ на это́ письмо́.  
*Please answer this letter immediately.*

**Infinitive (Ipfv.)**

Я не могу́ (не хочу́) отвѣ́чать. Что́ (какъ) мнѣ́ отвѣ́чать ?  
*I can't (don't wish to) answer. What (how) am I to answer ?*

Спра́шивать легкó, а отвѣ́чать трóдно.  
*It is easy to ask, but difficult to answer.*

**Infinitive (Pfv.)**

На тако́й вопро́съ я́ ниче́го не могу́ отвѣ́тить.  
*To such a question I can answer nothing.*

Я́ хочу́ ей́ отвѣ́тить, но́ не могу́.  
*I wish to answer her, but I cannot.*

Я́ не могу́ вамъ́ отвѣ́тить те́перь.  
*I can't answer you now.*

Мо́жно отвѣ́тить такъ. На́до отвѣ́тить сей-ча́съ.  
*(You) can answer thus. It is necessary to answer at once.*

## Cognate words

Отвѣтъ (m.) = an answer.

‘Ей крыса говоритъ въ отвѣтъ’ (Krylón).

‘The rat says to her for (lit. into) answer.’

Въ отвѣтъ на вашъ вопросъ сообщаю вамъ . . .

In answer to your question I inform you. . . .

Отвѣтственность (f.) = responsibility.

спи, младенца мой прекрасный, баюшки-баю. Lermontov. V

и спать подкупленной девицы VI Pushkin

Уль ты спишь CHAPTER 87 сложивши руку VIII Turg.

быль спать и сладко спать XIX Shishkov

SLEEPING, WAKING, WASHING, &c. (getting up, cf. p. 133,

dressng, cf. Chap. 46).

а въ дѣтствѣ давно уже спать. XXIII

A. Tol.

To sleep and awake

Спать (ipfv. ; pres. сплю, спать, спятъ, past спалъ, спала, спали, imper. спите), поспать (pfv. = to sleep for a little).

Спите хорошо ! Спите !

Sleep well ! Sleep, go on sleeping, don't wake up !

Вы хорошо спали ? Мнѣ что-то не спится.

Did you sleep well ? I can't get to sleep somehow.

Я всегда плохо сплю. Я выспался.

I always sleep badly. I have had a real good sleep.

Засыпать (ipfv.), заснуть or уснуть (pfv.) = to go to sleep.

Она заснула крепкимъ сномъ. Засните !

She has fallen asleep in a deep (lit. strong) sleep. Go to sleep !

Въ поѣздѣ я всегда засыпаю. Я скоро засну.

In the train I always fall asleep. I shall soon be asleep.

Дремать, за- Imper. „Ты же дреми“.

Стамбуль заснул передъ Богой. VI Pushkin

и от этой мысли я засну. XI Lermontov

Просыпáться (*ipfv.*), проснۇться (*pfv.*) = *to wake up*  
(intransitive).

Я просыпáюсь бчень рáно. Онъ проснۇлся.

*I wake up very early. He has woken up.*

Вы давнó проснۇлись? Онъ скóро проснётся.

*Have you been awake long? He will soon wake up.*

Сонъ (*m.*) = *sleep, dream*; сóнный = *sleepy* (also = *sleeping*).

Желáю вамъ пріятнаго сна (*genitive*).

*I wish you pleasant repose.*

*To rest.*

Отдыхáть (*ipfv.*; *pres.* отдыхáю), отдохнۇть (*pfv.*; *pres.*  
отдохнۇ, -нётъ, *past* отдохнۇль) = *to rest.*

Отдыхъ (*m.*) = *a rest.*

*To wake, awake*

Будить (*ipfv.*; *pres.* бужۇ, бۇдить, бۇдять, *past* будиль,  
&c., *imper.* будите), разбудить (*pfv.*): *to call, arouse,*  
*awake any one* (also пробуждáть, -áю, *ipfv.*, and про-  
будить, *pfv.*).

Не будите меня завтра, я бчень устáль.

*Don't call me to-morrow, I am very tired.*

Разбудите меня въ семь часóвъ (чёмъ свётъ).

*Call me at 7 o'clock (as soon as it is daylight).*

*Get up, cf. p. 133. Go to bed, lie down, cf. pp. 154-156.*

*Dress, cf. pp. 144-148.*

*To wash*

Мыть (*ipfv.*; *pres.* мóю, мóеть, мóютъ, *past* мыль, мýла,  
мýли, *imper.* мóй, мóйте) = *to wash* (transitive), вýмыть  
(*pfv.*, conjugated similarly, with accent throughout  
on вý-) = *finish washing.*

„Сплутъ и будятъ сонной брегъ” Тучев. I

будить мыслей длинной рядъ. XX II A. Тол

Both these verbs become intransitive with the addition of the reflexive pronoun -ся. Other verbs of similar meaning are *умывáть* (*ipfv.*) and *умыть* (*pfv.*).

Онъ моетъ (себѣ) рѹки. Я умывáюсь *or* моѹсь.  
*He is washing his hands. I am washing.*

Я хочѹ (мнѣ надо) мыться (вымыть рѹки).  
*I want to (must) wash (wash my hands).*

Вы моетесь горячей, тёплой или холодной водо́й ?  
*Do you wash in hot, warm, or cold water ?*

Бо́же мо́й, Бо́же мо́й, всё одно и то́ же мо́й ! (saying)  
*My God, my God, keep on washing one and the same thing !*

Мы́ло (*n.*)=*soap* ; умывáльни́къ (*m.*)=*a wash-handstand.*  
*The wash=сти́рка, laundrywoman=пра́чка, starch=крахма́ль, to wash linen=стира́ть (ipfv.), высти́рать (pfv.).*

*To bathe*

Купáться (*ipfv.* ; купáюсь), выкупáться (*pfv.*)=*to have a bath, to bathe* (intransitive ; without -ся transitive).

*To shave*

Бри́ть (*ipfv.* ; *pres.* брею *or* бри́ю, бре́етъ, бре́ютъ, *past* бри́лъ, *imper.* бре́йте), побри́ть *or* вы́брить (*pfv.*)=*to shave.* These verbs are transitive, and become intransitive with the addition of the reflexive pronoun -ся.

Вы са́ми бре́етесь ? Я са́мъ брею́сь.  
*Do you shave yourself ? I shave myself.*

Онъ тепе́рь бре́ется. Побре́йте меня́.  
*He is now shaving. Shave me.*

Мнѣ надо пойти́ побри́ться (о́г вы́бриться).  
*I must go and get a shave, or shave myself.*

see End of p. 317 *покупать*  
 = to purchase or to buy

Побрить, пожалуйста. Онъ брился. Онъ выбрился.  
*A shave, please. He was shaving. He shaved himself.*

Бритва (*f.*) = *razor*.

Причёсываться (*ipfv.*; -ваюсь), причёсаться (*pfv.*) = *to do one's hair*; причёска (*f.*) = *coiffure*.

Обстричься (от остричься, *pfv.*) = *to have one's hair cut*; постричь (*pfv.*) = *to have one's hair cut a little* (this latter verb is ordinarily used as an imperative on entering the hairdresser's).

Парикмахеръ (от цырюльникъ, *m.*) = *barber*; парикмахерская (*f.*) = *his shop*; острижка волосъ = *hair-cutting*.

## CHAPTER 88

### OPENING AND SHUTTING

There are altogether four sets of verbs to express these ideas, applicable to various objects.

#### I

Крыть (*ipfv.*; *pres.* крѣю, крѣетъ, крѣютъ, *past* крѣлъ, крѣла, крѣли, *imper.* крѣйте) = *to cover*; its perfective is покрыть = *to cover up*, similarly conjugated, and this has an imperfective frequentative покрывать, like читать.

Домъ былъ покрытъ желѣзной крышей.  
*The house was covered with an iron roof.*

Онъ покрылъ себя одѣяломъ и плѣдомъ.  
*He covered himself with a blanket (quilt) and a rug (plaid).*

Закрывать (*ipfv.*; -ваю), закрыть (*pfv.*; -крѣю) = *to shut*.  
 Especially used of closing boxes, trunks, drawers, or anything that has a lid; it is also used of (public)

„Закрѣвщи глазки” *Leontar. V.*

Бѣра плѣто небо кроетъ. ~~XXI~~ *Pushkin*  
 и всю её ужь тѣни покрывали XII *Tyush*

buildings, especially theatres, offices, &c., but should not, strictly speaking, be used of doors, windows, &c., though it is very often thus used.

Закро́йте чемодáнь (ящикъ, дверь, окно́).

*Shut the trunk or bag (box or drawer, door, window).*

Теáтръ сегóдня закры́тъ (past participle passive).

*The theatre is closed to-day.*

Накрывáть (*ipfv.*), накры́ть (*pfv.*) = *to cover* (especially in the phrase *накрывáть столъ* = *to lay the table*).

Открывáть (*ipfv.*), откры́ть (*pfv.*) = *to open, uncover; to discover*. This is the exact opposite of *закрывать*, *закрýть*, and the same remarks apply to it. *Откры́тое письмо́, откры́тка* = *post-card*.

Контóра тепéрь закры́та ; когда́ открóется ?

*The office is now shut ; when will it open ?*

Сегóдня не открóется, прáздникъ (неприсутственный день).

*It won't open to-day ; it is a holiday (a non-business day).*

Зáвтра бýдетъ откры́та (*fem.*).

*To-morrow it will be open (the office).*

Нáдо откры́ть éтотъ чемодáнь ? Открóйте !

*Must (I) open this trunk ? Open (it) !*

Прикрывáть (*ipfv.*), прикрýть (*pfv.*) = *to cover a dish*.

Раскрывáть (*ipfv.*), раскрýть (*pfv.*) = *to open ; to reveal*.

Скрывáть (*ipfv.*), скрýть (*pfv.*) = *to hide*. *Добавлено, сокройся!*

The commonest ways of writing *shut* and *open* on buildings or rooms are :

*open*

откры́то

*shut*

{ закры́то

{ за́перто (cf. p. 280).

*Укры́ться (to shelter) не искаль. XIX. Shishkov.*

## II

[Творить = *to create*.]

Затворять (*ipfv.*; *pres.* затворяю, like позволяю, p. 254),  
затворить (*pfv.*; *pres.* затворю, like говорю, p. 185).

This means *to shut* specifically doors and windows.

Затворите дверь (окно, форточку).

*Close the door (the window, the little inlet window, a part of the whole window which can be opened in winter).*

Отворять (*ipfv.*), отворить (*pfv.*) = *to open* doors and windows.

Растворять (*ipfv.*), растворить (*pfv.*) = *to open* (poetical).

## III

[-пирать -переть.]

Запирать (*ipfv.*; *pres.* запираю, like читаю), запереть (*pfv.*; *pres.* запру́, запрётъ, запру́тъ, *past* заперъ, заперла́, заперли, *imper.* запи́рте) = *to shut*, specifically *to bolt* the door. Запоръ (*m.*) = *constipation*.

Надо запереть. Не надо (не нужно) запирать.

*It is necessary to bolt (sc. the door). (You) mustn't (there is no need to) bolt (+ на ключъ = to lock).*

Музей запертъ. Галлерѳа заперта́. Заперто.

*The museum is shut. The gallery is shut. It is shut.*

[Отпираться = *to lean on*.]

Отпирать (*ipfv.*), отпереть (*pfv.*; *pres.* отпру́, &c., *past* отперъ, &c., *imper.* отпри́рте) = *to unbolt, to unlock*.

Отпри́рте дверь = *unbolt, unlock the door*.

## IV

[-мыкать, -мкнуть.]

Замыкать (*ipfv.*; *pres.* замыкаю, like читаю), замкнуть (*pfv.*; *pres.* замкнѳ́, *past* замкнѳ́ль, *imper.* замкнѳ́те) = *to lock*.



Замóкъ (gen. замкá) = a lock, padlock.

Зáмокъ (gen. зámка) = a castle.

Отмыкáть (*ipfv.*), отомкнúть (*pfv.*) = to unlock (this latter verb is often replaced by the other verbs to open).

Occupied, engaged is : зánять (-та, -то), plur. зánяты.

Free, disengaged is : свобóднень (-дна, -дно), plur. свобóдны.)

## CHAPTER 89

### IN ONE'S ROOM

(see also Chapters 42-52)

#### To spread (the bed)

Постлáть (*pfv.*; *pres.* постелю́, постелéть, постелю́ть, *past* постлáль, *imper.* постелíте).

Постелíте постéль. Постéль пóстлана ?

Make the bed ready. Is the bed made? (past participle passive.)

#### To clean, to brush

Чíстить (*ipfv.*; *pres.* чищú, чíститъ, чíстятъ), в́ычистить (*pfv.*) = to clean.

Пожáлуйста, в́ычистите мнѣ башмакí.

Please clean (or have cleaned) my boots (shoes).

Встряхнúть (*pfv.*) = to shake (clothes).

Встряхнíте и в́ычистите хорошéнько щёткою моё плáтьё.

Shake and thoroughly brush my clothes.

#### To hang

##### INTRANSITIVE

Висѣть (*ipfv.*; *pres.* висú, висíтъ, висáтъ, *past* висѣль) = to hang (повиснуть, *pfv.*, not often used).

Фонтанъ на воздуже повисъ XIV Тучевъ

Платье висѣтъ въ шкапѣ, шуба и пальто висѣтъ въ передней = *the clothes are hanging in the cupboard, the fur-coat and overcoat in the lobby.*

Зависѣтъ (*ipfv.* only ; *pres.* зависѣтъ) = *to depend.*

## TRANSITIVE

Вѣшать (*ipfv.* ; conjugated like дѣлать, cf. p. 22), повѣсить (*pfv.* ; *pres.* повѣшу, повѣситъ, повѣсятъ, *past* повѣсилъ, *imper.* повѣсьте) = *to hang, to hang up.*

Повѣсьте ваше пальто на этотъ крючокъ.

*Hang your overcoat up on this hook.*

*To weigh*

Вѣсить (*ipfv.*), свѣсить (*pfv.* ; both conjugated like повѣсить, see above) = *to weigh*, used both transitively and intransitively.

*To ring (transitive)*

Звонить (*ipfv.* ; *pres.* звоню, звонитъ, звонятъ), позвонить (*pfv.*) = *to ring the bell* (cf. p. 218).

Позвоните ! Кто-то звонитъ. Звонятъ.

*Ring the bell ! Some one is ringing. They are ringing* (sc. *some one is there*).

Я уже позвонилъ. Гдѣ звонокъ.

*I have already rung. Where is the bell ?*

*To arrange*

Устраивать (*ipfv.*), устроить (*pfv.* ; *pres.* устрою, устроитъ, устроятъ) = *to arrange, fix up.*

Я вамъ это устрою. Пожалуйста, устройте.

*I will arrange that for you. Please arrange (this).*

[Строить (*ipfv.*), построить (*pfv.*) = *to build.*]

To prepare (also = to cook)

Готóвить (*ipfv.*; *pres. cf. p. 25*), приготóвить (*pfv.*) = to prepare.

Приготóвьте мнѣ кóмнату (Приберите к.).

Get me a room ready (Make the room tidy).

Приготовлѣніе (*n.*) = preparation.

Да, *потоваясь въ бой опасный:*

To mend

V. *Генералов.*

Чинить (*ipfv.*; *pres. чиню, чинить, чинять*); починить (*pfv.*) = to mend (clothes, luggage, watch, &c.)

Это испóртилось въ дорóгѣ, нáдо егó починить.

This has got spoilt on the journey, it wants mending.

To pack (*cf. p. 153*).

## CHAPTER 90

### LIGHT, HEAT, AND COLD

To light, to burn (transitive)

Жечь (*ipfv.*; *pres. жгу, жгётъ ог жжётъ, жгутъ, past жжётъ, жгла, жгли, imper. жгите*) = to burn anything.

Сóлнце меня жжётъ (жгло).

The sun is burning (was burning) me.

*жжётъ ризянецъ лицо*

*IX Котлов.*

Зажигáть (*ipfv.*; like *читáть*), зажечь (*pfv.*; like *жечь*) = to set a light to anything.

Зажгите лáмпу (свѣчку, фoнáрь).

Light the lamp (the candle, the lantern).

Зажгите !

Light up ! (e.g. = turn on the electric light).

Matches = спички (*f. pl.*)

Обжéчься (*pfv.*) = to burn, scald oneself.

Онъ обжéгся (Онá обожглась).

He has burnt himself (She has burnt herself).

Сжигáть (*ipfv.*), сжечь (*pfv.*; *pres.* сожгú, *past* сжéгъ, сожгла, сожгли) = to burn up, consume.

погашáть } To extinguish (to put out) } (заси́ть (-а́шу) по-за-а́силь)

Туши́ть (*ipfv.*; тушú, туши́ть, тушатъ), потуши́ть (огзатуши́ть, *pfv.*) = to put out a light.

Потушите огонь.

Put out the light.

Милой другъ, погаси  
поцелуй твою! 1x Koltsov

To burn (intransitive)

Горéть (*ipfv.*; *pres.* горю, горитъ, горятъ, *past* горéль) = to burn, be alight, on fire, сгорéть (*pfv.*) = to be burnt up.

Горитъ! Въ óкнахъ горятъ огни́ (*sing.* огонь).

There's a fire! In the windows lights are burning.

Весь домъ сгорéль. Горитъ огонь.

The whole house was burnt down. A fire (or a light) is burning. (N.B. a conflagration = пожаръ).

To heat

I

Грéть (*ipfv.*; *pres.* грéю, грéеть), согрéть (*pfv.*) = to warm.

Сóлнце насъ грéеть. То весь горюмъ въ пыли́

The sun warms us.

XIX. Skisleten

Подогрéвать (*ipfv.*), подогрéть (*pfv.*) = to warm (a dish).

II

× Топи́ть (*ipfv.*; *pres.* топлю́, то́пить, то́пятъ), затопи́ть (*pfv.*; e.g. печь = the stove) = to heat.

× to heat  
топ-  
топ-

Затопите, пожалуйста !

*Light the fire (sc. in the stove), please !*

*To freeze*

Мёрзнуть (*ipfv.*; *pres.* мёрзну, мёрзнетъ, *past* мёрзъ, мёрзла) = *to be cold, to freeze (intransitive).*

Мёрзну (cf. *F.R.B.*, pp. 24, 154).

*I feel very cold, am shivering.*

Замерзать (*ipfv.*; like читатьъ), замёрзнуть (*pfv.*) = *to become frozen.*

Эта рѣка не замерзаетъ. Рѣка замёрзла.

*This river doesn't freeze over. The river is frozen.*

Вы замёрзнете (ог промёрзнете) ! Вы замёрзли (ог промёрзли) !

*You will get frozen ! You have got dreadfully cold !*

Замораживать (*ipfv.*), заморозить (*pfv.*) = *to freeze (transitive).*

Васъ заморозить ! Меня заморозило !

*You will get frost-bitten ! I have got frost-bitten !*

Морозъ (*m.*) = *frost*, мороженое (*n.*) = *ice-cream* (the ice : лёдъ, gen. льда, *m.*).

*To grow cold*

Стыть от стынуть (*ipfv.*; *pres.* стыну, стынетъ, *past* стылъ), остыть от простыть (*pfv.*, similar conjugation; простывать, *ipfv.*) = *to get cold (of dishes, &c.).*

*To catch a cold*

Простудиться (*pfv.*; *pres.* простужусь, простудитесь, *past* простудился). Cf. *F.R.B.*, p. 139.

*To shiver*

Дрогнуть, дрожу,  
по-дрожа́ть - дрожу

## CHAPTER 91

TO LOSE: ТЕРЯТЬ; TO LOOK FOR: ИСКАТЬ; TO FIND: НАХОДИТЬ, НАЙТИ

*To lose*

Терять (*ipfv.*; like позволять, cf. p. 254), потерять (*pfv.*; conjugation identical) = *to lose*.

Я постоянно теряю вещи.

*I am constantly losing things.*

Вы наверняка потеряете вашу сумочку.

*You will be sure to lose your handbag.*

Мы потеряли нашего лучшего друга.

*We have lost our best friend (sc. he is dead).*

Вы потеряли что-нибудь ?

*Have you lost anything (or something) ?*

Я потеряла свои перчатки (свой зонтик).

*I (fem.) have lost my gloves (my umbrella).*

Смотрите, не теряйте ничего.

*Mind and don't lose anything.*

*A loss is*: потеря (*f.*); это большая потеря = *that is a great loss*.

*To lose one's way*: заблуждаться (*ipfv.*; like читать), заблудиться (*pfv.*; like будить, p. 276); *we have lost our way* = мы заблудились, от, мы сбились с дороги.

*To lose one's head*: теряться, потеряться.

*To lose the train*, cf. p. 306.

*To lose (to spend, to waste)*

Трѣтѣть (*ipfv.*; *pres.* трѣчу, трѣтѣть, трѣтѣть, *imper.* трѣтьте), потрѣтѣть (*pfv.*) = *to spend, waste.*

Вы напрѣсно трѣтите такъ много (стѣлько) дѣнегъ.

*It is a pity (it is in vain, for nothing, a shame) you spend (waste) so much money.*

Она много трѣтѣть на одѣжду.

*She spends a lot on clothes.*

Мы напрѣсно трѣтимъ здѣсь время.

*We are wasting time here to no purpose.*

Не трѣтьте дѣнегъ на пустяки (понапрѣсну).

*Don't waste money on rubbish (to no purpose).*

Скѣлько вы вчерѣ потрѣтили (or истрѣтили or затрѣтили)?

*How much did you spend yesterday?*

*(To spend time cf. p. 114).*

*To hide*

Прѣтѣть (*ipfv.*; *pres.* прѣчу, прѣчетъ, прѣчутъ, *past* прѣталъ, *imper.* прѣчьте), спрѣтѣть (*pfv.*; identical conjugation) = *to hide (transitive)*; with the addition of the reflexive pronoun -ся it becomes intransitive.

Сѣнце спрѣталось за тѣчи.

*The sun has hidden behind the clouds.*

Это надо кудѣ-нибудъ спрѣтѣть.

*This must be hidden away somewhere.*

*To seek, to look for*

Искѣть (*ipfv.*; *pres.* ищѣ, ищѣтъ, ищѣтъ, *past* ищѣлъ, *imper.* ищѣте), поискѣть (*pfv.*; identical conjugation) = *to look for.*

Что вы ищете? Я ищу свой кошелёкъ.

*What are you looking for? I am looking for my purse.*

Мы вездѣ искали васъ. Надо это поискать.

*We looked for you everywhere. (I) must have a look for this.*

This verb has many important compound verbs derived from it, amongst which is :

Отыскивать (*ipfv.*), отыскать (*pfv.*) = *to search out*; this verb naturally acquires the meaning *to find by dint of or after long searching, discover.*

Сыщикъ (*m.*) = *a detective.*

Обыскъ (*m.*) = *a domiciliary visit.*

N.B. The initial *н-* of the verb combines with the final *-ъ* of those prepositions which end in a consonant to form *-ы-*.

*To find (also to consider)*

This important verb is a compound of *ити* and *ходить* with the preposition *на*, and literally means *to come upon* (cf. the Latin *invenio*).

As in the case of the other compounds of these verbs, *находить* is imperfective, and *найти* perfective. For the forms of the verbs, cf. pp. 73, 74, 290.

### Present

Я нахожy, что это подлость (дерзость, мёрзость).

*I consider that it is a mean trick (a piece of insolence, an abomination).*

Я нахожy, что это безобразно (возмутительно).

*I consider that it is abominable (lit. having no image or shape, or unlike anything at all) (shocking, revolting, disgusting).*



Я такъ нахожy. Какъ вы находите ?

*That is my opinion. What is your opinion ?*

The present of this verb is naturally not much used in its literal sense, except as an historic present, in narration.

**Future** (*Pfv.* ; *ipfv.* seldom used)

Вы найдёте книгу на моёмъ письменномъ столѣ.

*You will find the book on my writing-table.*

Гдѣ я васъ найду ? Вы меня легко найдёте.

*Where shall I find you ? You will find me easily.*

.. По сердцу я нашла бы друга "

**Past** (*Pfv.* ; *ipfv.* seldom used)

*Pustkin. E.c.*

Я нашёлъ портфель въ ящикѣ въ комодѣ.

*I found the pocket-book in a drawer in the chest of drawers.*

Гдѣ вы нашли эти деньги ? Я ихъ нашла въ шкапу.

*Where did you find this money ? I (fem.) found it in the cupboard.*

Я нашёлъ дорогу туда безъ всякаго труда.

*I found the way there without any difficulty.*

Мы нашли, что это было очень (не)вѣжливо съ его стороны.

*We considered that this was very (im)polite on his part.*

**Imperative** (*Pfv.* only)

Найдите мнѣ мои вещи (мой багажъ).

*Find me my things (my luggage).*

**Infinitive** (*Pfv.* ; *ipfv.* seldom used).

Я не могу найти дорогу туда одинъ (*fem.* одна) безъ помощи.

*about 1000*

*I can't find the road (way) there alone without help.*

Вы можете найти одинъ, я думаю.

*You are (will be) able to find it alone, I think.*

## CHAPTER 92

## TO BE, TO HAVE

The reflexive form of this verb is very commonly used and is one of the ways of expressing the verb *to be* (*to be found, find oneself*).

It is given here in full in order that the student may have an example of a reflexive verb complete.

	<i>Imperfective</i>	<i>Perfective</i>		
<i>Infinitive</i>	находиться	nakhadyít's(y)a <sup>1</sup>	найтись	naityís'
<i>Present</i>	(я) нахожусь	nakhazhus'	найдусь	naidús'
	(ты) находишься	nakhódyishs(y)a <sup>2</sup>	найдёшься	naidyóshs(y)a <sup>2</sup>
	(онъ) находится	nakhódyits(y)a <sup>2</sup>	найдётся	naidyóts(y)a <sup>2</sup>
	(мы) находимся	nakhódyims(y)a <sup>2</sup>	найдемся	naidyóms(y)a <sup>2</sup>
	(вы)ходитесь	nakhódyityes'	найдётесь	naidyótyes'
	(онí) находятся <sup>3</sup>	nakhódyats(y)a <sup>2</sup>	найдутся	naidúts(y)a <sup>2</sup>
<i>Past</i>	(онъ) находился	nakhadyíls(y)a <sup>2</sup>	нашёлся	nashóls(y)a <sup>2</sup>
	(она) находилась	nakhadyílas'	нашлась	nashlás'
	(онó) находилось	nakhadyílas'	нашлось	nashlós'
	(онí) находились	nakhadyílis'	нашлись	nashlyís'
<i>Imperative</i>	находись <sup>4</sup>	nakhadyís'	найдиесь <sup>4</sup>	naidyís'
	находитесь	nakhadyítyes'	найдитеесь	naidyítyes'

<sup>1</sup> Colloquially: tsa.

<sup>2</sup> Colloquially: sa

<sup>3</sup> Cf. p. 27.

<sup>4</sup> Where the 2nd sing. imper. ends in -ь or in a diphthong, e.g. -ай (cf. pp. 31, 32), this form ends in -ся, e.g. прячься != *hide!* купайся != *bathe!*

It will be understood that the forms of the imperative of this particular verb are naturally not often used in the reflexive form, and are here merely given as an illustration.

### Present

Гдѣ находится тепѣрь вашъ пріятель Борісъ Пáвловичъ?  
*Where is your friend Boris son of Paul at present?*

Въ настоящее время онъ находится въ Пскóвѣ.  
*At the present time he is at Pskov.*

Гдѣ находится такáя-то цѣрковь (такóй-то собóръ)?  
*Whereabouts is such-and-such a church (cathedral)?*

На какóй у́лицѣ находится такóй-то магази́нъ?  
*In which street is such-and-such a shop?*

Въ какóй части гóрода (огъ въ какóмъ кварта́лѣ) находится  
такóй-то вокза́ль?  
*In which quarter of the town is such-and-such a station?*

### Future (Pfv.)

(Не) найдѣтся ли у васъ (въ ва́шемъ магази́нѣ) экземпляръ  
такóй-то кни́ги?  
*Have you (not) got (in your shop) a copy of such-and-such  
a book?*

Не найдѣтся ли у васъ (огъ нѣтъ ли у васъ) мѣлочи?  
*Have you not by chance got some small change?*

Не найдѣтся ли у васъ пята́къ (пятачо́къ, грíвенникъ,<sup>1</sup>  
пятиалты́нный,<sup>1</sup> двугрíвенникъ, полты́нникъ, цѣл-  
ко́вый)?

*Have you not by chance got on you a 5-kopek copper piece  
(a 5-kopek, 10-kopek, 15-kopek, 20-kopek nickel piece,  
a 50-kopek, 1 rouble silver piece)?*

<sup>1</sup> Грíвна and алты́нъ are old names for 10- and 3-kopek coins.

**Past (Ipfv.)**

Въ то врѣмя мы находѣлись въ Нѣжнемѣ (sc. Нѣвгородѣ).  
*At that time we were (staying) at Nizhni (Novgorod).*

Гдѣ онъ тогда находѣлся (она находѣлась, вы находѣлись)?

*Whereabouts was he (she, were you) at that time?*

**Past (Pfv.)**

Дѣньги нашѣлись. Гдѣ это нашѣлось?

*The money has been found. Where was this (found)?*

The use of the verb **быть** = *to be* has been explained in the *F. R. B.*, chapters 8, 32. The frequentative form of this verb **быва́ть** (conjugated like **чита́ть**) is also very common.

Э́то (ча́сто) **быва́етъ**. Э́то (от э́того) **никогда́ не быва́етъ**.  
*That (often) happens. That never happens.*

На сѣверѣ Россіи зимо́ю дни **быва́ютъ** о́чень ко́роткіе, а лѣтомъ наоборо́тъ но́чи **почти́ совсе́мъ не быва́тъ**; э́то такъ **называ́емья бѣ́лыя но́чи**.

*In the north of Russia in winter the days are very short, and in the summer on the contrary there is almost no night at all; those are the so-called white nights.*

Вы у нихъ **быва́ете**? **Быва́ю**, но рѣ́дко.

*Do you visit them? Yes I do, but not often.*

Э́того со мно́й **никогда́ не быва́ло**.

*That has never happened to me.*

Вы **быва́ли** (от **бы́ли** когд́а-нибу́дь) въ Россіи?

*Have you ever been in Russia?*

**Бы́ль** разъ. Ни ра́зу **не-бы́ль**.<sup>1</sup> Она́ не **бы́ла**.

*I have once. I have never been. She has not been.*

<sup>1</sup> *N.B.* не разъ = *more than once*.

The verbs *быть* and *быва́ть* are used very frequently as auxiliary impersonal verbs in the two following ways (cf. *R. G.*, pp. 183, 188) :

*Бы́ло* with the *perfective* past of any verb means : *made as if, was on the point of (doing something)*, and implies an action which was imminent but was eventually not accomplished, e.g. :

Я бы́ло сѣлъ, а вдругъ замѣтилъ что нѣтъ сту́ла.

*I was going to sit down, when I suddenly noticed there was no chair.*

Она́ бы́ло опусти́ла письмо́ въ ящикъ, когда́ вспомни́ла что на нёмъ нѣтъ ма́рки.

*She was just going to drop the letter into the (letter-)box, when she remembered there was no stamp on it.*

Они́ бы́ло брѣси́лись на меня́, а тутъ отку́да ни возьми́сь жандармъ (cf. p. 165).

*They were just going to go for me (fling themselves at me), when suddenly there appeared a policeman.*

(These are rather more vivid ways of saying : *я хотѣлъ сѣсть, она́ хотѣла опусти́ть, они́ хотѣли брѣситься*, cf. p. 66).

*Быва́ло* with the *perfective* present (future) of any verb means : *often or sometimes used to (do anything)*, and is really only a rather more vivid way of putting what is usually expressed by the past tense of an *imperfective* frequentative verb :

Я быва́ло расскажу́ ему́, какъ мы съ отцо́мъ его́ познако́милсь.

*I would often tell him how his father and I became acquainted.*

Она́ бывáло повто́рѣтъ егó слова́.  
*She would often repeat his words.*

Мы бывáло за́ѣдемъ къ нимъ часá нá-два по доро́гѣ на ста́нцію.  
*We often used to look them up for an hour or two on our way (driving) to the station.*

(These are more vivid ways of saying : я ча́сто разска́зывать, она́ ча́сто повто́ряла, мы ча́сто за́ѣзжали.)

### To have

The verb *быть* is very frequently used with the meaning *to have* ; for examples cf. *F. R. B.*, chapters 40, 41, 42.

The verb *имѣть* (*ipfv.* ; *pres.* *имѣю, имѣеть, имѣють, past* *имѣлъ, imper.* *имѣйте*) is also fairly common, especially in sentences of an abstract character. It is used idiomatically in the following amongst other ways (cf. p. 216) :

Если вы ничегó не имѣете прóтивъ, я спущу́ окно́.  
*If you have no objection, I shall lower the window (lit. if you have nothing against).*

Если вы б́удете имѣть сл́учай, погово́рите съ нимъ.  
*If you (will) have an opportunity, have a talk with him.*

Эта пьеса́ имѣла о́грóмный успѣ́хъ.  
*This play had an immense success.*

Это собы́тiе имѣло о́чень ва́жныя послѣ́дствiя.  
*This event had very important consequences.*

На́до имѣть въ виду́, что по́ѣзда́ тепѣ́рь перепóблены.  
*One must have in mind that the trains are overcrowded.*

Кли́тъя *genus?* *skushlew XIX.*

## CHAPTER 93

## PHYSICAL (MANUAL) ACTIVITIES

*To throw, to fling*

- (1) Бросать (*ipfv.*; like читать), бросить (*pfv.*; *pres.* брoшу, брoсятъ, брoсятъ, *past* брoсилъ, *imper.* брoсьте) = *to throw, fling; abandon.* This verb is very frequently used reflexively of violent motion, e.g.:

Онъ брoсился къ дверямъ = *he made for the door*, она брoсилась бѣжать = *she dashed off at a run.*

The compound verbs are formed thus :

Выбрасывать (*ipfv.*), выбросить or выбросать (*pfv.*) = *to throw out.*

- (2) Кидать (*ipfv.*; like читать), кинуть (*pfv.*; *pres.* кину, кинетъ, кинуть, *past* кинулъ, *imperat.* киньте) = *to fling*; this is also frequently used reflexively.

Some of the commonest compound verbs are :

Скинуть (*pfv.*) = *to fling off (clothes).*

[Скидка (*f.*) = *a lowering of price.*]

Накинуть (*pfv.*) = *to fling on (clothes).*

*To break*

- (1) Ломать (*ipfv.*), сломать (*pfv.*; both conjugated like читать) = *to break (especially things that are broken in two, e.g. bones, sticks, umbrellas, furniture, &c.).* This verb has also other less common forms. Онъ сломалъ себѣ ногу (руку) = *he has broken his leg (arm)*; стулъ сломанъ = *the chair is broken (past participle passive)*, спинка (ручка) сломана = *the back (the handle, sc. of any piece of furniture or utensil) is broken, это сломано = this is broken (spoilt : испорчено, cf. p. 283).*

- (2) Разбивать (*ipfv.*; like читать), разбить (*pfv.*; like пить, cf. p. 199; *pres.* разобью, разобьётъ, разобьютъ) = to break (in pieces, e.g. glass and china).

Она разбила тарелку = she has broken a (or the) plate; стаканъ разбитъ = the tumbler is broken (past participle passive), стекло разбито = the (pane of) glass is broken.

#### To cut

- (1) Рѣзать (*ipfv.*; *pres.* рѣжу, рѣжете, рѣжутъ, *past* рѣзалъ, *imper.* рѣжьте) = to cut (anything with a sharp instrument). Compounds are, e.g. отрѣзать (*ipfv.*; *pres.* отрѣзаю), отрѣзать (*pfv.*; *pres.* отрѣжу) = to cut off.

Этотъ ножъ тупой, совсѣмъ не рѣжетъ = this knife is blunt, it doesn't cut at all, ножъ острый (or остёръ *astuor* predicative form), отлично рѣжетъ = the knife is sharp, it cuts perfectly; берегитесь, вы обрѣжете себѣ палець = take care, you will cut your finger, онъ обрѣзалъ себѣ руку = he has cut his hand; отрѣжьте мнѣ кусо́къ пиро́жнаго (*nom. sing.* пиро́жное) = cut me (off) a slice of cake, отрѣзаетъ вамъ ещё кусо́чекъ? = shall I cut you a little bit more (off)?

- (2) Рубить (*ipfv.*; *pres.* рублю, рубить, рубятъ, *past* рубилъ, *imper.* рубите) = to hew or chop (wood).
- (3) Сѣчь (*ipfv.*; *pres.* сѣку, сѣчѣтъ, сѣкутъ, *past* сѣкъ, сѣкла, сѣкли, *imper.* сѣките) = to hew, to thrash.

#### To tear

Рвать (*ipfv.*; *pres.* рву, рвѣтъ, рвутъ, *past* рвалъ, рвала́, рвали, *imper.* рвите) = to tear. Compounds are, e.g.: отрывать (*ipfv.*), оторвать (*pfv.*) = to tear off: Я разо́рвалъ (разорвала́) себѣ пла́тье = I have torn my clothes;



это разорвано (оторвано, сорвано) = *this is torn (torn off)*; обрванный = *ragged*.

### To touch

Трогать (*ipfv.*; like дѣлать), потрогать or тронуть (*pfv.*; *pres.* трону, тронеть, тронуть, *past* тронуль, *imper.* троньте) = *to touch*; тронуть means *to touch once*. Both verbs used reflexively mean *to start off, to move off*.

Не трогайте! = *don't touch!*

To feel by touching is = щупать (*ipfv.*), пощупать (*pfv.*; both conjugated like дѣлать).

### To move

Двигать (*ipfv.*; *pres.* двѣжу, двѣжетъ, двѣжутъ, or like дѣлать, viz. двѣгаю, &c.), двинуть (*pfv.*; conjugated like тронуть) = *to move*; this verb is transitive, and becomes intransitive with the addition of the reflexive pronoun -ся.

Compounds are (for change of accent in the *ipfv.* cf. pp. 246, 296, 299), e.g.:

отдвигать (*ipfv.*), отодвинуть (*pfv.*) = *to move away*.

подвигать (*ipfv.*), подвинуть (*pfv.*) = *to move further on*.

придвигать (*ipfv.*), придвинуть (*pfv.*) = *to move nearer*.

### To hold

Держать (*ipfv.*; *pres.* держу, держитъ, держатъ, *past* держалъ, *imper.* держите), подержать (*pfv.*) = *to hold, keep hold of, wait, stop* (not to keep possession of, cf. pp. 130, 140).

Держите! = *hold! stop! wait!* держите прямо (правѣе, лѣвѣе) = *keep straight on (more to the right, more to the left)*.

Задёрживать (*ipfv.*), задержáть (*pfv.*) = *to keep back, to delay*; задержáка (*f.*) = *a delay*.

Содержáть (*ipfv.* and *pfv.*, only the one form exists) = *to keep up, maintain, support, also to hold, to contain*; содержáние (*n.*) = *contents*.

*To tie*

Вязáть (*ipfv.*; *pres.* вяжý, вяжетъ, вяжутъ, *past* вязáлъ, *imper.* вяжіте) = *to tie*; *to knit*.

Свя́зывать (*ipfv.*), связáть (*pfv.*) = *to tie together*.

Завя́зывать, завязáть = *to tie in a knot, tie up*.

Развя́зывать, развязáть = *to untie*.

Пожáлуйста, завяжіте (развяжіте) ёто !

*Please tie this up (untie this) !*

Завя́зка (*f.*) = *the plot*, развя́зка (*f.*) = *the dénouement*; повя́зка (*f.*) = *a bandage*; связъ (*f.*) = *a connexion*.

*To seize, to catch hold of*

Хватáть (*ipfv.*; conjugated like читáть), хватítъ (*pfv.*; *pres.* хвачý, хвátитъ, хвátятъ, *past* хватíлъ, *imper.* хватíte) = *to seize hold of*.

This verb is almost commoner in its compound form :

Схвáтывать (*ipfv.*), схватítъ (*pfv.*); онъ схватíлъ егó за-руку (за-ногу, за-голову) = *he caught hold of him by the hand or arm (by the foot or leg, by the head)*.

In its simple form this verb is very frequently used impersonally with the meaning *to suffice* :

Хватáетъ = *that suffices*, хвátитъ = *that will do, that'll be enough*, не хватáло = *there used not to be enough of*, не хватíло = *there was not enough of* :

Вамъ чегó-нибудь не хватáетъ ?

*Do you lack anything ?*

У меня не хватало (ог не хватало) денегъ.

*I hadn't enough money.*

Это хватить (ог будетъ) !

*That will do !*

## CHAPTER 94

TO FALL: ПАДАТЬ, ПАСТЬ; TO MEET: ВСТРЪЧАТЬ,  
ВСТРЪТИТЬ; TO JUMP

### To fall

Падать (*ipfv.*; conjugated like думать, cf. p. 22), пасть (*pfv.*; паду, падётъ, падутъ, *past* палъ, пала, пали, *imper.* падите)=to fall. This verb (падать) shares with the verb бѣгать (cf. p. 246) the peculiarity that in the *imperfective* forms of the verb compounded with prepositions the accent shifts to the next syllable. The *perfective* form of this verb (пасть) is not very commonly used, the compound forms of the verb being much commoner, e.g.

Выпадать (*ipfv.*), выпасть (*pfv.*)=to fall out.

Пропадать (*ipfv.*), пропасть (*pfv.*)=to disappear, be destroyed, perish (cf. пропасть (*f.*)=an abyss; a swarm, mass).

Упадать (*ipfv.*), упасть (*pfv.*)=to fall down. На колѣни упадѣа. Туп

Онъ выпалъ изъ саней=he fell (has fallen) out of the sledge, ночью выпалъ снѣгъ=there was (has been) a fall of snow in the night; чемоданъ (кошелѣкъ) у меня пропалъ=I have lost my trunk (purse); онъ пропалъ куда-то=he has disappeared somewhere; куда вы пропали?=where have you got to?; она совсѣмъ пропала=she is quite done for; вы упадете=you will fall down;

это упадётъ = *this will fall*; онъ поскользнулся и упалъ въ воду = *he slipped and fell into the water*.

One of the compounds of this verb is particularly common and deserves special notice :

Попадать (*ipfv.*), попастьъ (*pfv.*) = *to fall into, upon ; to hit upon, to get anywhere by chance*.

Мальчикъ топоромъ рубилъ всё, что попадало.

*The boy used to hew with the axe all that came his way.*

Куда мы попали? Какъ вы сюда попали.

*Where have we got to? How did you get here?*

(*sc. how did you manage to find yourself here*)

Очень трудно туда попастьъ.

*It is very difficult to get (in) there (e.g. a theatre).*

This verb is often used reflexively with similar meaning, *to come across, to fall in with, to meet, to get caught* :

Мнѣ на встрѣчу попадается мальчикъ.

*I happen to meet a boy.*

‘Вѣдь кошка, говорятъ, попалась въ когти льву!’

*‘For the cat, they say, has got caught in the claws of the lion!’ (Krylov.)*

#### *To meet*

Встрѣчать (*ipfv.*; conjugated like читать), встрѣтить (*pfv.*; *pres.* встрѣчу, встрѣтить, встрѣтятъ, *past* встрѣтилъ, *imper.* встрѣтите) = *to meet (any one)*.

This is used just as commonly as a reflexive meaning *to fall in with any one*; frequently indeed, especially in narration, the verb is not used at all, and the expression на встрѣчу (= *to the meeting*) is substituted.

Онѣ встрѣтятъ (встрѣтили) насъ на вокзалѣ.

*They will meet (met) us at the station.*

Гдѣ вы съ ними встрѣтились ?

*Where did you meet (with) them (make their acquaintance).*

Намъ идѣть на встрѣчу мужикъ.

*We meet a peasant (lit. there is coming to meet us).*

Емѹ на встрѣчу волкъ.

*He meets (or met) a wolf.*

### *To jump*

- (1) Скакать (*ipfv.*; *pres.* скачѹ, скачеть, скачуть, *past* скакаль, *imper.* скачѣте), поскакать (*pfv.*) = *to jump, hop*, and also very frequently means *to ride fast, to gallop*, of horses and people riding. A cognate verb is :  
 Выскáкивать (*ipfv.*), выскочить (*pfv.*; *pres.* выскочу, выскочитъ, выскочать, *past* выскочилъ) = *to jump out, to come running out, to slip out.*
- (2) Прѣгать (*ipfv.*; like дѣлать, cf. p. 251) = *to jump*, прѣгнуть (*pfv.*; like трѣнуть, cf. p. 297) = *to make a jump* (cf. pp. 15-17).

## CHAPTER 95

### *TO TURN, TO RETURN*

#### *To turn*

This verb is difficult owing to the large variety of forms and meanings which it includes, all more or less similar. The root verb is :

Вертѣть (*ipfv.*; *pres.* верчѹ, вѣртить, вѣртятъ, *past* вертѣль, *imper.* вертѣте), повертѣть = *to turn, twist*. This verb is transitive, but becomes intransitive with the addition of the reflexive pronoun -ся. It has a fre-

quantative imperfective form : повёртывать = *to keep turning*.

A more useful verb is the cognate one :

Поворáчивать (*ipfv.*; *pres.* поворáчиваю, поворáчивается, поворáчиваютъ), поворотíть *and* повернúть (*pfv.*; *pres.* повороçú, поворо́тнитъ, поворо́тятъ, *past* поворо́тилъ, *imper.* поворо́тите; *pres.* повернú, повернётъ, повернúть, *past* повернúль, *imper.* поверни́те) = *to turn*.

These verbs, all originally transitive, can all be and are generally used as intransitive verbs, meaning *to turn aside, to take a turning*. With the addition of the reflexive pronoun -ся they acquire the meaning *to turn oneself bodily*.

Мы тутъ поворáчиваемъ напра́во.

*Here (at this point) we turn to the right.*

Гдѣ мнѣ на́до поворáчивать ?

*Where must I turn (take a turning) ?*

Поворáчивайте (ог поворо́тите) налѣ́во !

*Turn to the left !*

Гдѣ вы повернúли (ог поворо́тили) ?

*Where (at which point) did you turn ?*

При пѣрвомъ поворо́тѣ (*nom. sing.* поворо́тъ).

*At the first turning.*

Онъ повернúлся ко мнѣ.

*He turned round towards me.*

Other forms of the same verb are :

Завѣртывать (*ipfv.*), завернúть (*pfv.*) = *to wrap up in paper*.

Оборáчиваться<sup>1</sup> (*ipfv.*), оборотíться<sup>1</sup> and обернúться<sup>1</sup> (*pfv.*) = *to turn round and face*; cf. обрацáть(ся)<sup>1</sup> (*ipfv.*), обратíть(ся)<sup>1</sup> (*pfv.*) = *to turn, to direct (oneself)*.

Развёртывать (*ipfv.*), развернúть (*pfv.*) = *to unwrap, unfold*.

Сворáчивать (*ipfv.*), своротíть and свернúть (*pfv.*) = *to turn off, aside*.

### To return

This verb is connected with the last :

Возвращáться (*ipfv.*; conjugated like читáть), возвратíться and вернúться (*pfv.*; *pres. возвращúсь, возвратíтся, возвратятся, past возвратился, imper. возвратитесь*) = *to return, to come back*. This verb is intransitive, and without the reflexive pronoun -ся means *to return, to give back*.

Людíи тепёрь возвращáются изъ за грани́цы.

*People are now returning from abroad.*

Когда вы вернё́тесъ домо́й ?

*When shall you return home ?*

Мы возвращáлись домо́й изъ теа́тра.

*We were returning home from the theatre.*

Мы вчера́ вернúлись (ог возврати́лись).

*We returned yesterday.*

The return is : возвращéние (*n.*).

Э́то случи́лось до на́шего возвращéния.

*This happened before our return.*

Она́ захворáла (ог заболéла) тотча́сь по на́шемъ возвращéнии домо́й изъ за грани́цы.

*She fell ill immediately after our return home from abroad.*

<sup>1</sup> в has dropped in these verbs after the preposition об-

## CHAPTER 96

## DELAY AND HASTE

*To wait*

Ждать (*ipfv.*; *pres.* жду, ждѣтъ, ждутъ, *past* ждалъ, ждала́, ждали́, *imper.* ждите́) = *to wait*; подождать (*pfv.*; *pres.* подожду́, подождѣтъ, подождутъ, *past* подождаль, подождала́, подождали́, *imper.* подождите́) = *to wait a short time.*

Я жду съ нетерпѣніемъ ва́шего отвѣта.

*I am waiting for your answer with impatience.*

Чего́ вы ждёте ? Я васъ жду давнó.

*What are you waiting for ? I have been waiting for you a long time.*

Я б́уду васъ здѣсь ждать.

*I shall wait for you here (an indefinite time).*

Я подожду́ ещё пять минутъ.

*I shall wait five minutes longer.*

Мы ждали́ тамъ, пока́ они́ не пришл́и.

*We waited there until they came.*

Ждите́ здѣсь, пока́ я не прид́у.

*Wait here until I come.*

Не ждите́ меня́ ! Подождите́ !

*Don't wait for me (don't expect me) ! Wait a bit !*

Дожд́аться (*ipfv.*; like читáтъ), дожд́аться (*pfv.*) = *to wait until any one comes, to expect.*

Ожд́ать (*ipfv.*; like читáтъ) = *to await, expect.*



*To be in time*

Успѣвать (*ipfv.*; like читать), успѣть or поспѣть (*pfv.*; *pres.* успѣю, успѣете, успѣютъ, *past* успѣлъ) = *to have time, be in time* (спѣть, *ipfv.* = *to ripen*, cf. p. 217).

Мы поспѣемъ къ поѣзду (къ обѣду, къ слѣжбѣ).

*We shall be in time for the train (the dinner, the service).*

Поспѣемъ ! Вы не поспѣете.

*We shall be in plenty of time ! You won't be in time.*

Мы только что поспѣли къ началу представлѣнія.

*We were only just in time for the beginning of the performance.*

Я не успѣю это сдѣлать передъ обѣдомъ.

*I shan't have time to do that before dinner.*

Вы не успѣете туда пойти передъ отъѣздомъ.

*You won't have time to go there before (your) departure.*

Я не успѣлъ сказать вамъ эту новостъ.

*I wasn't able (hadn't time) to tell you the news.*

Успѣхъ (*m.*) = *success, progress.*

Это имѣло большбй успѣхъ.

*This had a great success.*

*To hurry*

(1) Спѣшить (*ipfv.*; *pres.* спѣшу, спѣшите, спѣшатъ), поспѣшить (*pfv.*) = *to hasten.*

Куда вы спѣшите ? Я спѣшу на поѣздъ.

*Where are you hastening to ? I am hastening for the train.*

Мы спѣшили на вокзалъ, на станцію, на пароходъ.

*We were hastening to the station, to the steamer.*

Не спѣшите ! Поспѣшите ! Мнѣ надо спѣшитьъ.  
*Don't hurry ! Hurry up ! I must hurry.*

(2) Торопиться (*ipfv.* ; *pres.* тороплюсь, торопитесь, торопятся), поторопиться (*pfv.*) = *to hurry.*

Кудá вы торопитесь ? Я не тороплюсь.  
*Where are you hurrying to ? I am in no hurry.*

Не торопитесь ! Поторопитесь !  
*Don't hurry ! Hurry up !*

*To be late*

Опáздывать (*ipfv.* ; *pres.* опáздываю, &c.) ; опаздáть (*pfv.* ; *like* читáть) = *to be late.*

Онъ всегда опáздываетъ въ шкóлу (къ обѣду).  
*He is always late for school (for dinner).*

Я боюсь, что мы опоздаемъ на пóездъ.  
*I fear that we shall be late for the train.*

Вы опоздаете на пароходъ. Не опоздаемъ.  
*You will be late for the steamer. We shan't be late.*

Не опáздывайте къ обѣду !  
*Don't be late for dinner.*

Пóездъ имѣетъ чéтверть часа опáздыванiя.  
*The train is a quarter of an hour late (lit. has).*

*To catch a train is :* поспѣть къ пóезду.

*To miss a train :* прозвáать пóездъ ; прозвáать (*pfv.* ; *like* читáть) = *to miss, lit. to yawn past or through.*

Мы не поспѣли къ пóезду ; мы его прозвáали.  
*We weren't in time for the train ; we missed it.*

*It is late, it is too late = пóздно ; early = рáно.*

## CHAPTER 97

TO TRY, DECIDE, FORGET, REMEMBER

*To try (to test, to attempt)*

Пробовать (*ipfv.*; *pres.* пробу́ю, пробуе́тъ), попробовать (*pfv.*; *past* попробова́лъ, *imper.* попробу́йте) = *to try, test, attempt.*

Я попробую, могу ли я это сде́лать.

*I shall make an attempt to see whether I can do this.*

Вы пробовали когда-нибудь э́ту ры́бу ?

*Have you ever tasted this fish ?*

Я пробовалъ (ог попробовалъ), по-мо́ему вку́сно.

*I have tried (or I had a taste), I think it's nice.*

Попробуйте, вамъ навѣ́рно понра́вится.

*Try (it), you will be sure to like it.*

*To try (to make an effort)*

Стара́ться (*ipfv.*; *like* чита́ть), поста́раться (*pfv.*) = *to make an effort.*

Я поста́раюсь объ́ясни́ть вамъ э́то дѣ́ло.

*I shall try and explain this matter to you.*

Поста́райтесь прі́йти ! Ра́дъ стара́ться !

*Try and come ! I am glad to do my best !*

*To decide*

Рѣша́ть (*ipfv.*; *like* чита́ть), рѣши́ть (*pfv.*; *pres.* рѣшу́, рѣши́тъ, рѣша́тъ, *past* рѣши́лъ) = *to decide.*

Какъ вы рѣши́ли ? Мы рѣши́ли такъ.

*How have you decided ? We have decided thus.*

x 2

*мой сомне́нья разрѣши́! е.о.*

Used reflexively this verb means *to make up one's mind to anything, to settle on something* :

На что вы рѣшились ?

*What have you made up your minds to do ?*

*To forget*

This verb is a compound of *быть* and means literally *to be behind*.

Забыва́ть (*ipfv.* ; like *быва́ть*), забы́ть (*pfv.* ; like *быть*, cf. *F. R. B.*, chapter 8) = *to forget*.

Я васъ не забыва́ю. Я всё забыва́ю.<sup>1</sup>

*I am not forgetting you. I keep on forgetting.<sup>1</sup>*

Я васъ никогда не забуду. Вы не забудете ?

*I shall never forget you. You won't forget ?*

Онъ объ́ этомъ навѣрно (вѣроятно) забудеть.

*He will certainly (probably) forget about this.*

Я про́ это совсе́мъ забы́ль (забыла *fem.*).

*I have (or had) quite forgotten about this.*

Я забы́ль какой нѳмеръ его́ дѳма (моѳей кѳмнаты).

*I have forgotten what is the number of his house (of my room).*

Вы забы́ли какой у него́ былъ нѳмеръ ?

*Have you forgotten what was his number ?*

Я забы́ль сказа́ть, написа́ть, посла́ть, купи́ть.

*I forgot to say, to write, to send, to buy.*

Не забудьте ! Не забудьте написа́ть. Не забыва́йте насъ.

*Don't forget ! Don't forget to write. Don't forget us.*

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *F. R. B.*, p. 57.

До могилы не забыли этой ночи оневои.  
Turgenev  
За глуши забытого селенья" Pushkin's

The verbs *позабывать*, *позабыть* are used with identical meaning.

*To remember*

Помнить (*ipfv.*; *pres.* помню, помнить, помнѣть), вспомнить (*pfv.*) = *to remember*.

Я отлично помню, когда это случилось.

*I perfectly well remember when this happened.*

"Помни мать  
своего" *Лермонтов*

Вы помните, что<sup>1</sup> онъ намъ сказалъ?

*Do you remember what he said to us?*

"И не помнишь обо мне"  
*Тургенев.*

Я не помню, куда я положилъ эти вещи.

*I don't remember where I put these things.*

Я буду васъ помнить во вѣки вѣковъ.

*I shall remember you for ever.*

Я только-что вспомнилъ (вспомнила fem.).

*I have only just remembered.*

Память (*f.*) = *memory*, памятникъ (*m.*) = *a monument*.

There are many compounds of this verb, amongst others :

Вспоминать (*ipfv.*; like читать) = *to recollect often*.

Напоминать (*ipfv.*), напомнить (*pfv.*) = *to remind*.

Напомните мнѣ ! Это мнѣ напоминаетъ её.

*Remind me ! That reminds me (of) her.*

Упомянуть (*ipfv.*), упомянуть (*pfv.*; *pres.* упомяну, упомянетъ, упомянуть, *past* упомянулъ) = *to mention*.

Вышеупомянутый = *the above-mentioned*.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. note on p. 59.

## CHAPTER 98

## TO USE, GET USED, LEARN, BE OF USE

*To use, make use of*

Употреблять (*ipfv.*; like позволять) = *to use*, употребить  
(*pfv.*; *pres.* употребляю, употребить, употребять) =  
*to apply (make use of)*.

Для чего это употребляется?

*What is this used for?*

Вы это часто употребляете?

*Do you often use this?*

*To get used to*

Привыкать (*ipfv.*; like читать), привыкнуть (*pfv.*; *pres.*  
привыкну, привыкнетъ, привыкнутьъ, *past* привыкъ,  
привыкла, привыкли) = *to get accustomed* (привычка  
(*f.*) = *a habit*; обычай (*m.*) = *a custom*).

Ко всему можно привыкать.

*One can get used to everything.*

Вы скоро къ этому привыкнете.

*You will soon get used to that.*

Я не могу къ этому привыкнуть.

*I cannot get used to this.*

Я совсѣмъ привыкъ (*fem.* привыкла) къ этой жизни.

*I have quite got used to this life.*

Отвыкать (*ipfv.*), отвыкнуть (*pfv.*) = *to grow unaccustomed*  
*to*.

Я совсѣмъ отъ этого отвыкъ (*fem.* отвыкла).

*I have got unused to that.*

*To teach, to learn*

Учить (ipfv. ; pres. учу́, учи́ть, учатъ, past учи́ль, imper. учи́те), научи́ть and вы́учить (pfv.) = *to teach* (cf. p.184); used reflexively this verb means *to learn*.

Учи́тель (учи́тельница) учи́ть, и ученики́ (учени́цы) учатся въ учи́лицѣ (шкóлѣ).

*The master (mistress) teaches, and the boy pupils (girl pupils) learn in school.*

Я учу́сь русскому́ языку́.

*I am learning the Russian language.*

Чему́ онъ васъ учи́ть ?

*What is he teaching (what does he teach) you ?*

Вы скóро вы́учитесь э́тому.

*You will soon learn this.*

Гдѣ вы научи́лись рúсскому языку́ ?

*Where did you learn Russian ?*

Other forms of the verb are :

Изу́чивать and изуча́ть (ipfv.), изучи́ть (pfv.) = *to study*.

Обуча́ть (ipfv.), обучи́ть (pfv.) = *to instruct*.

Учѣние (n.) = *the lesson*, обучѣние (n.) = *instruction*.

(*To teach a subject, to lecture on, cf. p. 184*).

*To be of use*

This verb is most often used impersonally :

Годи́тся (ipfv. ; pres. я го́жусь, онѣ годи́тся), пригоди́тся (pfv.) = *it is of use, it is useful*.

Э́то никуда́ не годи́тся. Напрáсно.<sup>1</sup>

*That is of no good, is worthless, useless. To no purpose.*

Мóжетъ бы́ть э́то пригоди́тся на что́-нибудь.

*Perhaps that will come in handy for something.*

<sup>1</sup> Can be used as an impersonal verb or as an adverb, cf. p. 287.

Э́то намъ́ о́чень пригодѣлось.

*That was most useful to us.*

Э́то легко́ мо́жетъ вамъ́ пригодѣться.

*That may easily be of use to you.*

*To serve*

Служѣть (*ipfv.*; *pres.* служу́, служить, служать), послужѣть (*pfv.*) = *to serve* (also of army and government service).

Чему́ (or для чего́) э́то служить ?

*What is the good of this, what is this used for ?*

Служба́ (*f.*) = *service* (*church, army or government service*);  
зау́тренняя (*f.*) = *early service*, обѣ́дня (*f.*) = *midday-service*, ве́черняя (*f.*) = *evensong*.

Слуга́ (*m.*) = *a man-servant*, служанка́ (*f.*) = *a maid-servant*, прислуга́ (*f.*) = *a domestic, a servant (of either sex)*; *the servants* (collectively); *service, attendance*.

## CHAPTER 99

### BIRTH, GROWTH, LIFE AND DEATH

*To be born*

Родѣться (*pfv.*) = *to be born*.

Гдѣ вы родились ? Она́ родилась въ Россіи.

*Where were you born ? She was born in Russia.*

Онъ́ родился въ Англіи (во Франціи).

*He was born in England (in France).*

У ней (у него́, у нихъ) родился сынъ.

*A son has been born to her (to him, to them).*



Она́ родила́ дѣвчу (дѣвочку).

*She has given birth to a little daughter (girl).*

*Birthday* is : День рождѣнія (*nom. sing.* рождѣніе).

*Christmas* is : Рождество́ (Христово). See p. 66.

### To grow

Расті́ (*ipfv.* ; *pres.* расту́, растѣтъ, расту́тъ, *past* росъ, росла́, росли́, *imper.* расті́те), вы́расти (*pfv.*)=to grow. (N.B. In compounds this verb is often spelt -рости.)

Вы скѣро растѣте. Ребѣнокъ не растѣтъ.

*You grow quickly. The child doesn't grow.*

Вы очень вы́росли. Дѣрево мѣдленно росло́.

*You have grown a lot. The tree grew slowly.*

### Cognate words

Рость (*m.*)=growth, stature ; растѣніе (*n.*)=a plant, a growth ; растительность (*f.*)=vegetation.

Подрѣстокъ (*m.*)=a youth ; взрѣслый=a fully grown man, взрѣслые=grown-up people [*young people*=молодёжь (*f.*)]

### To live

Жить<sup>1</sup> (*ipfv.* ; *pres.* живу́, живѣтъ<sup>2</sup>, живу́тъ, *past* жилъ, жила́, жили́, *imper.* живі́те)=to live ; пожить (*pfv.*)=to live for a short time.

Гдѣ вы живѣте ? Я живу́ на Горѣховой у́лицѣ.

*Where do you live ? I live in Gorókhovaya street.*

Мы живѣмъ крѣглый годъ въ дѣрѣвнѣ.

*We live all the year round in the country.*

<sup>1</sup> The first syllable of this verb in all parts and compounds of it always sounds like жы- (и after ж=ы (y), cf. p. 2).

<sup>2</sup> To be distinguished from the substantive живѣтъ=stomach (cf. *F. R. B.*, p. 130).

Гдѣ вы будете жить, въ гостиницѣ, въ номерѣ (въ меблированной комнатѣ), въ пансіонѣ, въ какомъ-нибудь семействѣ, или въ гостяхъ у кого-нибудь ?

*Where are you going to live, in a hotel, in a furnished room, in a boarding-house, in a family, or to stay with friends ?*

Прѣжде мы жили за-городомъ.

*Formerly we used to live out of town (in the suburbs).*

Жили-были дѣдъ да баба.

*Once upon a time there was an old man and his wife (lit. there lived and were ; this is the conventional opening of many of the folk-tales).*

Вѣкъ живи, вѣкъ учишь !

*Live and learn ! (lit. live (your) whole life (age), learn (your) whole life).*

With a frequentative imperfective is formed the phrase :

Какъ вы поживаете ? = *How do you do, how are you ?*

*To greet* is = здорѣваться (*ipfv.* ; *pres.* здорѣваюсь, здорѣвается, здорѣваются, *past* здорѣвался) ; поздорѣваться (*pfv.*) = *to say how do you do.*

Дѣти поздорѣвались съ родителями.

*The children said good morning to their parents.*

Of the same origin as this word is the verb здравствовать = *to be well, imper.* здравствуйте ! = *be well* (the equivalent of *good morning, how are you*) ; да здравствуетъ Россія ! = *long live Russia !*

Another verb meaning *to greet* is кланяться (*ipfv.* ; conjugated like позволять, cf. p. 254), поклониться (*pfv.* ; *pres.* поклонюсь, поклонится, поклонятся, *past* поклон-

нился, *imper.* поклонитесь) = *to greet*, lit. *to bow down to*; this is one of the words used to express the conveying of greetings, and is most common in its imperfective form: кланяйтесь ему́ отъ меня́ = *greet him from me*, мои родители кланяются вамъ (отъ шлютъ вамъ поклонъ) = *my parents greet you (or send you greeting)*.

The verb жить has a great many compounds, and derivative and cognate words. Some of the commonest are :

Доживать (*ipfv.*; like читать), дожить (*pfv.*) = *to live until, to live to see*; онъ доживаётъ свой вѣкъ = *he is ending his days* (lit. *age*), онъ дожилъ (она дожилá) до глубокой старости = *he (she) lived to a great (lit. deep) (old) age*, я не доживу́ до того́ времени = *I shan't live to see that time*.

Заживать (*ipfv.*), зажить (*pfv.*) = *to heal up* (*intrans.*).

Наживать (*ipfv.*), нажить (*pfv.*) = *to earn, gain (money)*.

Переживать (*ipfv.*), пережить (*pfv.*) = *to live through, to experience*.

Какія временá мы тепёръ переживаемъ !

*What times we are living through now !*

Что мы пережили (онъ пережилъ, она пережила) !

*What we (he, she) have lived through !*

Проживать (*ipfv.*), прожить (*pfv.*) = *to live or stay a short time, to sojourn*; also *to live through, to squander*.

У насъ проживаютъ тепёръ гости.

*We have guests (friends) staying with us now.*

Вы будете тамъ проживать ?

*You are going to stay some time there ?*

Мы проживёмъ тамъ недѣлю.

*We shall stay there a week.*

Мы про́жили у нихъ шесть недѣль.

*We stayed with them six weeks.*

Она́ прожила́ у насъ цѣлое лѣто.

*She stayed the whole summer with us.*

Я про́жилъ тамъ пять мѣсяцевъ.

*I stayed there five weeks.*

#### Cognate words

Жизнь (*f.*) = *life*; живóй = *alive*, also *lively*; живóтное (*n.*) = *animal*; пожилóй = *elderly*.

Житьё-бытьё (*n.*) = *manner of life, every-day life*; жилище (*n.*) = *dwelling*; жилéць (*plur.* жилъцы) = *a lodger*.

#### To fall ill

Захворáть (*pfv.*; conjugated like читáть) and заболѣть (*pfv.*; *pres.* заболѣю, заболѣеть) = *to fall ill*.

#### To hurt (intransitive), to ache

This is an impersonal verb, with the forms :

Боли́тъ (*ipfv.*; *pres.* боля́тъ, *past* болѣ́лъ) = *it aches*.

Голова́ у меня́ (ужáсно) боли́тъ.

*My head aches (terribly).*

У него́ зу́бы боля́тъ.

*He has toothache (lit. his teeth ache).*

У ней нога́ боли́тъ.

*Her foot (or leg) hurts (or aches).*

Что у когó боли́тъ, тотъ о томъ и говори́тъ.

*Whatever whom hurts, one about it talks (proverb).*

#### Cognate words

Боль (*f.*) = *pain*; бо́льно = *it is painful*; болѣ́знь (*f.*) = *illness*; мнѣ тутъ бо́льно = *it hurts me here*.

Cf. *F. R. V.*, pp. 21, 82, 130, 156.

*To recover*

- (1) Выздора́вливать (*ipfv.*), вы́здоровѣть (*pfv.*; *pres.* вы́здоровѣю, вы́здоровѣеть, вы́здоровѣютъ, *past* вы́здоровѣлъ) = *to get well, completely recover.*
- (2) Поправля́ться (*ipfv.*; conjugated like позволя́ть, cf. p. 254), попра́виться (*pfv.*; *pres.* попра́влюсь, попра́витесь, попра́вятся, *past* попра́вился) = *to recover, get better.*

Я надѣюсь, что вы скоро поправитесь !  
*I hope that you will soon get better !*

Она́ уже́ совсе́мъ попра́вилась.  
*She has already quite recovered.*

Without the reflexive pronoun this verb means *to correct* ;  
 cf. направля́ть (*ipfv.*), напра́вить (*pfv.*) = *to direct*,  
 напра́вленіе (*n.*) = *a direction (in which one is going)* ;  
 справля́ться (*ipfv.*), спра́виться (*pfv.*) = *to inquire for information.* (*In*)correct = (не)пра́вильно.

*To marry*

(of the man)

Жени́ться (*only one aspect* ; *pres.* жени́юсь, жени́тся, *past* жени́лся) = *to marry.*

Онъ жени́тся на племянницѣ моего́ отца́, т.е. (= то есть)  
 на мое́й двоюродной сестрѣ́.

*He is marrying (sc. is going to marry) my father's niece,  
 that is, my (female) cousin.*

(of the woman)

Выходи́ть (*ipfv.*), вы́йти (*pfv.*) за́мужъ = (*lit.*) *to go out  
 behind a man, to marry.*

Она́ выходи́тъ (вы́йде́тъ, вы́шла) за́мужъ за пле-

мянника моёй матери, т.е. за моего двоюродного брата.

*She is marrying (is going to marry, has married) my mother's nephew, i.e. my (male) cousin.*

[*Marriage* = бракъ (m.); *wedding* : свадьба (f.).]

Cf. *F. R. B.*, pp. 59, 64, 181, 182, 197.

*To wound*

Ранить (only the one aspect exists of this verb) = *to wound*.

The past participle passive, which is the commonest part of this verb, is раненый, short form ранень.

*A wound* is : рана (f.).

*To kill.*

Убивать (*ipfv.*; conjugated like читать), убить (*pfv.*; conjugated like пить, cf. p. 201 : *pres.* убью, убьётъ, убьютъ, *past* убилъ, *imper.* убейте) = *to kill, to murder*. The past participle passive is убитый, short form убитъ. This verb is a compound of бить = *to strike, hit, beat* (cf. p. 327).

*To die*

Умирать (*ipfv.*; conjugated like читать), умереть (*pfv.*; *pres.* умру, умрётъ, умрутъ, *past* умеръ, умерла, умерли, *imper.* умрите) = *to die*. The examples given illustrate the two aspects of this verb :

Многие умираютъ отъ этой болѣзни.

*Many die from this illness.*

Вы отъ этого не умрѣте.

*You will not die from this.*

Она долго умирала отъ чахотки.

*She was for long mortally ill with consumption.*

Неужели онъ умеръ ! Отъ чего (какой болѣзни) она умерла ?

*Is he really dead ! From what (what illness) did she die ?*

Умереть не страшно, а страшно умирать.

*Not to die, but to be dying is terrible (quoted from Mazon).*

When speaking to relatives or friends of a personal loss, and in announcements, another verb, скончаться (lit. *to be finished*), is used, but only to state the fact, not the cause, e.g. :

Онъ скончался мѣсяць тому назадъ.

*He died a month ago.*

To die of animals is издыхать (*impfv.*), дѣхнуть, издохнуть (*pfv.*, lit. *expire*) отъ околѣвать, околѣть, e.g. :

Одна изъ нашихъ коровъ издохла (околѣла).

*One of our cows is dead.*

#### Cognate words

Смерть (*f.*) = *death*, but also кончина (*f.*) of people ; мѣртвый = *dead*, but N.V. покойный = *the late* (lit. *quiet*, of people) ; смѣртный = *mortal*, безсмѣртный = *immortal*, смѣртельная болѣзнь, рана = *a mortal illness, wound*.

Замира́тъ, замере́тъ (-иру) *to become deadened.* (die away.)

## CHAPTER 100

*"и замре́тъ твоей  
Этотскій лёнень!"*

*Tur.*

### THE EMOTIONS

#### To fear

Боя́ться (*ipfv.* ; *pres.* бою́сь, бо́итесь, бо́ятся, *past* боя́лся, *imper.* бо́йтесь), побо́яться (*pfv.*) = *to fear, be afraid*.

Чего вы бо́итесь ? Я ниско́лько не бою́сь.

*What are you afraid of ? I am not in the least afraid.*

Нечего боя́ться ! Не бо́йтесь !

*There's nothing to fear ! Don't be afraid !*

Волкóвъ боя́ться, въ лѣсъ не ходи́ть (proverb).

*If you fear the wolves you mustn't go into the forest.*

Опасáться (*ipfv.*; like чита́ть) = *to dread, apprehend.*

*To frighten*

Пугáть (*ipfv.*; like чита́ть), испугáть (*pfv.*) = *to frighten.*

Вы меня́ испугáли! Я ужáсно испугáлся!

*You frightened me! I got an awful fright!*

Дѣвочка испугáлась (боя́лась).

*The little girl was frightened (was afraid).*

*To hope*

*Imperfective only*

*Infinitive*

надѣ́яться nadyéyat's(y)a (cf. p. 290)

*Present*

*Past*

(я) надѣ́юсь nadyéyus' надѣ́лся nadyéyals(y)a

(онѣ) надѣ́ется nadyéyets(y)a *Imperative*

(они́) надѣ́ются nadyéyuts(y)a надѣ́йтесь nadyéityes'

Я надѣ́юсь, что вы хорошó спáли?

*I hope (that) you slept well?*

Я не б́уду на это́ надѣ́яться.

*I shall not count on that (cf. p. 230).*

Она́ надѣ́ялась познако́миться съ ва́ми.

*She hoped to make your acquaintance.*

Не надѣ́йтесь на меня́. 'Не надѣ́йся по-пустóму.'

*Don't count on me. 'Entertain no vain hopes' (Kryl6v).*

Мóжно надѣ́яться, что вы придёте?

*May we expect you?*



Cognate expression "когда-бы надежду я имѣла" Pushkin.

Надёжда (*f.*) = *hope* (literally *what is put on*, cf. p. 144).

## To regret

Жалѣть (*ipfv.*; *pres.* жалѣю, жалѣеть), сожалѣть (*pfv.*) = *to regret, be sorry*; сожалѣніе (*n.*) = *regret*.Жаловаться, жалуясь = *to complain* (пожаловаться, *pfv.*); пожаловать = *to grant*; жалованіе (*n.*) = *salary*.

## To weep

Плакать (*ipfv.*; *pres.* плачу, плачешь, плачутъ, *past* плакала, *imper.* плачь, плачьте), заплакать (*pfv.*) = *to weep, cry* (a tear is слеза, *pl.* слёзы).

Отчего вы плачете? Мальчикъ заплакалъ.

*Why are you crying? The boy burst into tears.*

Не плачь(те)! Дитя плакало навзрыдь.

*Don't cry! The child was crying in sobs.*

## To smile

Улыбаться (*ipfv.*; like читать), улыбнуться (*pfv.*; *pres.* улыбнусь, улыбнётся, *past* улыбнулся) = *to smile* (улыбка, *f.* = a smile).

Почему вы улыбаетесь (ты улыбаешься)?

*Why are you (art thou) smiling?*

## To laugh

Смѣяться (*ipfv.*; *pres.* смѣюсь, смѣется, смѣются, *past* смѣялся, *imper.* смѣйся, смѣйтесь), засмѣяться (*pfv.*) = *to laugh*.

Чему вы смѣетесь? Она засмѣялась.

*What are you laughing at? She burst into laughter.*

Вы надо мной смѣетесь. Не смѣйтесь!

*You are laughing at (lit. over) me. Don't laugh!*Смѣхъ (*m.*) = *laughter*; смѣшпый = *laughable, comic*.

## To feel

Чувствовать (*ipfv.*; *pres.* чувствую, чувствуетъ, чувствуютъ), почувствовать (*pfv.*) = *to feel, to be conscious or sensible of.*

Какъ вы себя чувствуете ?

*How do you feel ?*

Я чувствую себя отлично (плохо).

*I feel very well indeed (bad, ill).*

*To feel hot, cold, &c., cf. F. R. B., chap. 47 ; to feel tired = to be tired, cf. p. 136 ; to feel = to touch with the hands = щупать (ipfv.), пощупать (pfv.), like дѣлать, cf. p. 297. Чувство (n.) = a feeling, sensation.*

## To astonish, to be astonished

Удивлять (*ipfv.*; like позволять), удивить (*pfv.*; *pres.* удивлю, удивить, удивятъ).

When used with the meaning *to be astonished* this verb is reflexive.

Это меня очень удивляетъ ;—нисколько не удивляетъ.

*This surprises me very much ;—does not surprise me in the least.*

Я удивляюсь вамъ.

*I am surprised at you.*

Ваше письмо меня удивило.

*Your letter surprised me.*

Удивлѣніе (n.) = *astonishment* ; къ моему удивлѣнію = *to my surprise* ; удивительно = *it is astonishing, astonishingly*, ниче́го удивительнаго въ э́томъ нѣтъ = *there is nothing surprising in that.*

## To rejoice

Рáдоваться (*ipfv.*; *pres.* рáдуюсь, рáдуется, like рисовáть, cf. p. 22), обрáдоваться (*pfv.*) = to be glad.

Вотъ цѣлѹетъ меня To kiss *Милый другъ, поцѣлуй поцѣлуй твоей! Kolton.*

Цѣловáть (pronounced цаловáть, *ipfv.*; *pres.* цѣлѹю) = to kiss, поцѣловáть (*pfv.*; *pres.* поцѣлѹю = I shall give a kiss, *imper.* поцѣлѹй(те) != kiss !=) = to give a kiss.

Поцѣлѹй (*m.*) = a kiss. See p. 169. § 67

## I like (it pleases)

This verb is almost always used impersonally :

Нрáвится (*ipfv.*; *pres.* 3rd plur. нрáвятся), понрáвится (*pfv.*) = it pleases, it will please.

Мнѣ это оченъ нрáвится. Какъ это вамъ нрáвится ?  
I like that very much. How do you like that ?

Мнѣ эта мѹзыка (картíна) не нрáвится.  
I don't like that music (picture).

Я дѹмаю, что эта кнíга вамъ понрáвится.  
I think (that) you will like this book.

Это мнѣ понрáвилось. Это мнѣ не нрáвилось.  
I liked that. I didn't like that.

Этотъ ромáнъ мнѣ оченъ понрáвился.  
I liked that novel very much.

Вамъ эта пьеса понрáвилась ?  
Did you like that play ?

## To like, to love, to be fond of

Любíть (*ipfv.*; *pres.* люблѹю, любíтъ, любя́тъ, *past* любíлъ, *imper.* любíте), полюбíть (*pfv.*) = to like, love (разлюбíть, *pfv.* = to cease to love).

Мáша лю́битъ шоколадъ, Сáша лю́битъ мармаладъ,  
Чѣмъ я виновáта, что люблю́ солдáта? (popular rhyme)

*Mary likes chocolate, Alexandra likes sweets of fruit-jelly,  
Why am I (fem.) to blame, that I like (or love) a soldier?*

Вы это́ любите? Я это́ (ог этого́) не люблю́.  
*Are you fond of this? I am not fond of it.*

Я люблю́ гуля́ть. Вы любите танцова́ть?  
*I like walking. Do you like dancing?*

Я васъ (ог тебѣя) люблю́. Я васъ (ог тебѣя) полюби́ль.  
*I like (love) you (thee). I have taken a fancy to you (thee).*

Люби́ насъ чѣрненькими, а бѣленькими насъ вся́кій  
полю́битъ (proverb).

*Love us when we are black (predicative instrumental),  
when we are white any one will love us.*

Онъ въ неѣ влю́бился (ог влюблёнъ).  
*He is in love with her.*

Она́ въ негѣ влю́билась (ог влюбленá).  
*She is in love with him.*

Любо́вь (f.) = *love*; любóвникъ (m.), любóвница (f.) =  
*lover*; любíтель (m.), любíтельница (f.) = *amateur*,  
онъ любíтель мýзыки = *he is fond of music*, любíте-  
льскія фотогрáфии = *amateur photographs*.

*Wish* (cf. pp. 62-67) is желáние (n.); *desire* = охóта (f.),  
which also = *hunting, sport*; нѣтъ у меня охóты = *I  
have no desire . . .*; охóтиться = *to hunt*; охóтникъ =  
(1) *a sportsman*, (2) *a lover of*, онъ большóй охóтникъ  
до теáтра = *he is very fond of the theatre*; я до это́го  
не охóтникъ = *I don't care much for that*.

## APPENDIX I

Alphabetical list of prepositions used in composition with verbs, showing the several forms in which each appears, with their *primary* meanings :

1. без- = *without*
2. в-, во-, = *in*
3. воз-, вз-, взо- (вос-, вс-) = *up*
4. вы- = *out*
5. до- = *as far as*
6. за- = *behind*
7. из-, изо- (ис-) = *out*
8. на- = *on*
9. над-, надо- = *over*
10. низ- (нис-) = *down*
11. о-, об-, обо- = *round*
12. от-, ото- = *away*
13. пере-, пре- = *across, over*
14. по- implies limitation of the activity denoted by the verb.
15. под-, подо- = *under*
16. пред- = *before*
17. при- = *at*
18. про- = *past, through*
19. раз-, разо-, роз- (рас-, рос-) = *asunder*
20. с-, со- = (1) *with*, (2) *off*
21. у- = *away*

Examples of the use of these prepositions in composition are given on pp. 231–44 of the author's Russian Grammar : many will have been noted in the course of this book.

The meanings given in this list are those termed *primary* ;

they prevail in the case of many verbs, such as those of motion, cf. pp. 83, 86, 88, 100, 103, 107, 110, 247, 257.

In the case of many other verbs these are not apparent, and there are developed what may be called *secondary* or *adventitious* meanings, cf. pp. 133, 141, 190, 192.

Further, almost any preposition may be used merely to make an *imperfective* into a *perfective* verb, when it is apt to lose its meaning often entirely, cf. pp. 54, 66, 173, 177, 194, 205, 208, 231, 235, and *R. G.*, pp. 211, 231-244.

The prepositions ВОЗ-, ВЫ-, НИЗ-, ПЕРЕ-, and РАЗ- are only used in composition. up. out. down across asunder

Prepositions ending in -з, except БЕЗЪ, change з into е before all voiceless consonants except с.

Prepositions ending in a consonant + ъ retain the ъ if compounded with a word beginning with a soft vowel; but if the vowel is и, then the ъ + и combine to form ы (cf. pp. 194, 235, 288).

In very many cases verbs are compounded with more than one preposition (cf. pp. 114, 153, 184). When analysing words care must be taken not to mistake the final consonant of a preposition for the initial consonant of a root, and *vice versa*.

## APPENDIX II

Certain verbs, totally different in meaning, are confusing by reason of their outward similarity.

The following list gives some of the most important of these arranged in alphabetical order.

Pairs of verbs similar in meaning, e.g. бѣжѣть and бѣгѣть, бросѣть and бросить, are not included; the most necessary of these have already been adequately treated in the course of the book and their number is very large.

The verbs are *imperfective* except where otherwise specified.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past</i>
будѣть <i>to awaken</i>	бужу́, будѣть	будѣль
быть <i>to be</i>	[fut., буду́, бу́детъ]	быль
бить <sup>1</sup> <i>to strike</i>	бью́, бѣтъ	билъ
везти́ <i>to convey</i>	везу́, везѣтъ	вѣзь
вести́ <i>to lead</i>	веду́, ведѣтъ	вѣль
выть <i>to howl</i>	вѣю́, вѣѣтъ	выль
вить <i>to twist</i>	вью́, вѣѣтъ	вилъ
вѣдѣть <i>to see</i>	вѣжу́, вѣдѣть	вѣдѣль
вѣдать <sup>2</sup> <i>to know</i>	вѣдаю́, вѣдаѣтъ	вѣдалъ
гла́дѣть <i>to stroke</i>	гла́жу, гла́дѣть	гла́дилъ
глядѣть <i>to look</i>	гляжу́, глядѣть	глядѣль
дава́тъ <i>to give</i>	даю́, даѣтъ	дава́ль
да́вить <i>to squeeze</i>	да́влю, да́вить	да́вилъ
да́рътъ <sup>3</sup> <i>to give</i>	дарю́, дарѣтъ	дарѣль
[уда́рить <i>to hit</i> (pfv.)]	уда́рю, уда́рить	уда́рилъ]
дѣ́лать <i>to do</i>	дѣ́лаю, дѣ́лаѣтъ	дѣ́лалъ
дѣ́лить <i>to divide</i>	дѣ́лю, дѣ́литъ	дѣ́лилъ
жа́ть <i>to press</i>	жму́, жмѣтъ	жа́ль
жа́ть <i>to reap</i>	жну́, жнѣтъ	жа́ль

<sup>1</sup> Has *perfective*: побѣть, but *to beat, hit* or *strike once, to give a blow* is usually rendered by: уда́рить (pfv.), cf. p. 201.

<sup>2</sup> Replaced in prose and conversation by знать (cf. pp. 176, 208).

<sup>3</sup> Has *perfective*: подарѣть = *to make a present of, + dat.*; даръ = *a gift*. Уда́рить (see above) has an *imperfective* of its own, уда́рятъ; уда́рѣніе = *the accent, stress, emphasis* on a syllable.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past</i>
купáть(ся) <i>to bathe</i>	купáю(сь), купáет(ся)	купáл(ся)
купíть <i>to buy (pfv.)</i>	куплю́, кúпить	купилъ
местí <i>to sweep</i>	метú, метётъ	мёлъ
метáть <i>to fling</i>	мечú, мечетъ	метáлъ
молóть <i>to grind</i>	мелю́, меле́тъ	молóлъ
молотíть <i>to thresh</i>	молочú, молóтитъ	молотилъ
орáть <i>to roar</i>	ору́, орётъ	орáлъ
	( <i>scream</i> )	
орáть <i>to plough</i>	ору́, бретъ	орáлъ
пасть <i>to fall (pfv.)</i>	падú, падётъ	паль
пастí <sup>1</sup> <i>to pasture</i>	пасú, пасётъ	пасъ
пахáть <sup>2</sup> <i>to plough</i>	пашú, пáшетъ	пахáлъ
пáхнуть <i>to smell</i>	пáхну, пáхнетъ	пáхнулъ
	( <i>intrans.</i> )	
пахнúть <i>to waft (pfv.)</i>	пахнú, пахнётъ	пахнúлъ
пить <i>to drink</i>	пью, пьётъ <sup>3</sup>	пилъ
пѣть <i>to sing</i>	пою́, поётъ <sup>4 5</sup>	пѣлъ
плáкать <i>to weep</i>	плáчу, плáчетъ	плáкалъ
платíть <i>to pay</i>	плачú, платíть <sup>6</sup>	платилъ
пóтчевать <i>to regale</i>	пóтчую, пóтчуе́тъ	пóтчевалъ
почивáть <i>to repose</i>	почивáю, почивáе́тъ	почивáлъ

<sup>1</sup> N.B. спасти́, *to save* (pfv.); спасú, спасётъ; спастъ.

<sup>2</sup> This verb also means *to waft* (ipfv.).

<sup>3</sup> *Imperative*: пей.

<sup>4</sup> *Imperative*: пой.

<sup>5</sup> a poet = поётъ, a poem = поёма (or стихотворёние), poetry = поёзья.

<sup>6</sup> pronounced: plótyit, cf. p. 205.



<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>Present</i>	<i>Past</i>
пуска́ть (ipfv.) <i>to let go</i>		пуска́ю, пуска́еть	пуска́ль
пусти́ть (pfv.)		пущу́, пу́ститъ	пусти́ль
стupáть (ipfv.) <i>to step</i>		стupáю, стupáеть	стupáль
ступи́ть (pfv.)		ступлю́, ступи́тъ	ступи́ль
(these 4 verbs are especially bewildering in their various compounds, cf. pp. 135, 257)			
смѣ́ть	<i>to dare</i>	смѣ́ю, смѣ́еть	смѣ́ль
смѣ́яться	<i>to laugh</i>	смѣ́юсь, смѣ́ется	смѣ́ялся
сто́ить	<i>to cost</i>	сто́ю, сто́итъ	сто́иль
сто́ять	<i>to stand</i>	стою́, стои́тъ	стоя́ль
ходи́ть	<i>to walk</i>	{хожу́, ходи́тъ, ходи́- мъ, ходи́те, ходя́тъ}	ходи́ль
хотѣ́ть	<i>to want</i>	{хочу́, хочеть, хоти́мъ, хоти́те, хотя́тъ}	хотѣ́ль
ѣ́сть	<i>to eat</i>	{ѣ́мъ, ѣ́шь, ѣ́сть ѣ́димъ, ѣ́дите, ѣ́дятъ}	ѣ́ль
(F.R.V., p. 27) <i>is</i>		есть	—
ѣ́хать	<i>to ride</i>	{ѣ́ду, ѣ́дешь, ѣ́детъ ѣ́демъ, ѣ́дете, ѣ́дутъ}	ѣ́халь



## INDEX OF RUSSIAN VERBS, ETC.

(N.B. *Compound verbs, i.e. verbs compounded with prepositions, not specially mentioned in this index will be found by cutting off the preposition or prepositions, see list on p. 325 and remarks on p. 326, e.g. сдѣлать=с- дѣлать, уставать, =у- ставать.*)

беру́, cf. братъ  
-бирать 166, 167  
бить 201  
болѣть 316  
бояться 319  
братъ 163  
брить 277  
брѣсить 295  
будить 276  
быва́ть 292-4  
быть 293  
бѣгать, бѣжать,  
240, 247

везти́ 104, 109  
вернуться́ 303  
вертѣть 301  
вести́ 104, 112  
взять 163, 167  
видать 213, 215  
видно́ 216  
видѣть 208  
висѣть 281  
водить 104, 112  
возвратиться, воз-  
вращаться 303  
вози́ть 104, 109  
возможно́ 59  
возьму́, cf. взять  
вои́ть 224  
врать 158  
встрѣтить 300  
встряну́ть 281  
вздоровѣть 317

вѣйти, выходѣть  
317  
вѣдать 327  
вѣрить 52  
вѣро́йно 59, 61  
вѣсѣть 282  
вѣшать 282  
вязать 298  
  
глядѣть 215  
говорѣть 185  
годѣться 311  
горѣть 284  
готѣвить 283  
грѣть 284  
гуля́ть 74, 78-80, 99

дава́ть 179  
дари́ть 185  
дать 179  
двѣгать, двѣнуть  
297  
держа́ть 297  
до́лженъ 68  
доста́точно 134  
ду́мать 22  
дѣва́ть 143  
дѣла́ть 251  
дѣть 143

жа́ловаться 321  
жалѣть 321  
жать 236  
жда́ть 84, 127, 304  
жела́ть 62  
женѣться 317

жечь 283  
жить 313  
  
забы́ть 308  
за́втракать 198  
завѣща́ть 141  
замкнѣть, замы-  
ка́ть 280  
заперѣть, запира́ть  
280  
запреща́ть 69, 258  
засну́ть, засыпа́ть  
275  
затвори́ть 280  
захвора́ть 316  
звать 264  
звони́ть 282  
здороваться 37, 314  
-знава́ть 174, 175  
знако́миться 176  
знать 173  
знача́ть 175  
зову́, cf. звать  
  
игра́ть 235  
ид- 73-83  
имѣть 216, 294  
иска́ть 287, 288  
ити́, 73-83  
  
-каза́ть 191-3  
каза́ться 191, 192  
ката́ться 93, 96, 99  
кида́ть, кинуть 295  
-кла́дывать 152  
кля́няться 314

класьть 149  
кѡнчить 262  
крыть 278  
купаться 277  
купить 202  
курить 254, 258  
кушать 195

-лагать 151-3  
лгать 156  
лежать, 156  
летѣть 240-9  
лечь 154  
ловить 171  
-ложить 151-3  
ложиться 154  
ломать 295  
любить 323  
лягу, cf. лечь

мѣрзнуть 285  
можно 59  
мочь 54  
мыть 276  
мѣнять 146, 207  
мѣшать 60

надо, надобно 68  
надѣяться 320  
называться 265  
найти(сь), нахо-  
дить(ся) 288-92  
напрасно 287, 311  
начать, начинать  
259  
невозможно 59, 81  
невѣроятно 59  
нельзя 68  
нести 105  
-нимать 167-9  
носить 105  
нравиться 323  
нужно 68  
нѡхать 223  
-нять 167-9

обѣдать 198

обязанъ 68  
одѣваться, одѣться  
144  
опаздать 306  
опасаться 320  
оставаться 129  
оставить, остав-  
лять 139  
останавливаться,  
остановиться 126  
остаться 129  
отворить 280  
отвѣтить, отвѣчать  
272  
отдохнуть, отды-  
хать 276

падать, пасть 299  
пахнуть 224  
печь 198  
писать 231  
пить 199  
плавать 250  
плакать 321  
платить 205  
плыть 250  
поворотить 302  
позволить 254  
поздравлять 66  
поймать 171  
пойти 73-83, 98  
показать 193  
покупать 202  
полагать 152  
положить 149  
получить 239  
помнить 309  
помогать, помочь  
60  
понимать, понять  
170  
поправить(ся) 317  
портить 226, 283,  
295  
послать 236  
поспѣть 305

постлать 281  
посылать 236  
потребовать 68  
пошѣль, cf. пойти  
поѣхать 90-9  
править 99  
прибавить 151  
привезти, приво-  
зить 110  
привыкнуть 310  
пригласить 268  
придѣтся 68  
принести, прино-  
сить 107  
принято 68  
приходится 68  
приходить 83  
причесаться 278  
пришелъ, cf. прий-  
ти  
пришлось 71  
прійти (ог придти)  
83  
приѣзжать, приѣ-  
хать 100  
пробовать 307  
продавать 184, 204  
продолжать 261  
прозѣвать 306  
просить 270  
проснуться, про-  
сыпаться 276  
простудиться 285  
прочѣсть 224  
прыгать 301  
прятать 287  
пугать 320  
пускать, пустить  
256  
путешествовать 91  
пѣть 235  
пѣшкѡмъ 82, 83, 99  
  
радоваться 323  
разбить 296  
ранить 318

- расти 313  
рвать 296  
родиться 312  
росла, рось, cf.  
расти  
рубить 296  
рѣзать 296  
рѣшить 104, 308
- садить, сажать 162  
сидѣть 160  
сказать 185  
скакать 301  
слать 236  
служить 312  
слѣшать 217  
слыхать 222, 223  
слышать 217  
слышно 223  
слѣдуеть 68  
смотреть 208  
смѣяться 321  
согласиться 269  
спать 275  
спрашивать, спро-  
сить 266  
спѣшить 305  
-ставать 133-6  
ставить 137  
-ставить, -ставлять  
141, 142  
становиться 120
- стараться 307  
стать 120  
-стать 133-6  
стоить 115  
стоять 115  
стричь 278  
ступать 329  
сты(ну)ть 285  
сумѣть 177  
сходить 74-99  
считать 228  
сѣздить 91-9  
сѣсть 194  
сѣсть 158  
сѣчь 296  
сяду, cf. сѣсть
- терять 286  
тонуть 244, 250  
топить 244, 284, 285  
торопиться 306  
тратить 287  
требовать 72  
трогать, тронуть  
297  
тушить 284
- убить 318  
удивлять 322  
ужинать 198  
уйти 86  
улыбаться 321
- умереть, умирать  
318  
умѣть 177  
употреблять 310  
успѣть 57, 305  
устроить 282  
утомлять 136  
уходить 86  
учить(ся) 311  
ушѣль, cf. уйти  
уѣзжать, уѣхать  
103
- хватить 298  
ходить 74-82, 98  
хотѣть 62
- цѣловать 323
- чинить 283  
чистить 281  
читать 224  
чувствовать 322
- шѣль, шла, cf. иттѣ  
шлю, cf. слать
- щупать 297, 322
- ѣздить 91-9  
ѣсть 194  
ѣхать 90-9

## ENGLISH SUBJECT-INDEX

- able 54-8, 177-9, 305
- accept 169
- accustomed 310
- ache 316
- acquaintance 175, 176
- add 151 *with etc*
- afraid 319, 320
- agree 269
- allow 254-7
- allowed (it is) 59
- amateur 324
- answer 272-5
- arrange 282
- arrive 100-3 *by train*
- ask 266-72
- ask (charge) too much 271
- astonish 322
- awake 275, 276
- back 96, 302
- bake 198
- bathe 277
- be 290-4
- be born 312
- become 120-5
- bed 281
- beg 270
- begin 124, 259-61
- be in bed 156, 157
- be in time 305, 306
- be late 306
- believe 52, 191
- be of use 311
- boil 198
- born 312
- break 295, 296
- breakfast 198
- bring 107, 108, 110, 111
- brush 281
- burn 283, 284
- buy 202-4
- call 264-6
- can 54-7, 177-9
- cannot 55-7
- careful (be) 30, 59
- carry 104-6
- cart 109
- catch 171-3, 298, 306
- cease 135
- change 207
- charge 163, 271
- clean 281
- close 279, 280
- clothes 144-8
- cold 285
- collect 167
- come 73-83, 83-6, 90-2, 98, 99
- consider, 228-30, 288
- constipation 280
- continue 261
- convey 109
- cook 198, 283
- correct 317
- cost 117-19
- count 228-30
- cover 278
- cry 26, 28, 321
- cut 296
- dead 319
- decide 104, 307, 308
- depart 103, 104
- diarrhoea 108
- die 318
- dine 198
- direction 317
- discount 295
- discover 174, 279
- do 251-3
- don't 68, 69
- do one's hair 278
- dress 144-8
- drink 199-201
- drive (*intransitive*) 90-100
- drown 244, 250
- early 81, 306
- eat 194-8
- end 262
- enjoy 131, 141, 142
- enough 134, 298
- enquire 174, 317
- excessive, exorbitant = ask too much,
- expect 152
- explain 55, 56, 62
- extinguish 284
- fall 299
- fatigue 136
- fear 319, 320
- feed (*transitive*) 26, 31
- feel 297, 322
- fetch 107, 108, 110, 111, 133, 134
- find 288, 300
- find in 134
- find out 174
- finish 262
- fire 284, 285
- fling 295
- float 250
- fly 240-9
- fond of 323, 324
- foot (on, by) 82, 83, 99

- forbid 258, 259  
 forbidden (it is) 59, 69  
 forget 308  
 free (of charge) 88, 206  
 freeze 285  
 frighten 320  
  
 gather 167  
 get (*intransitive*) 120-5  
 get (*transitive*) 133, 134, 239, 240  
 get up 133  
 get used 310  
 give 179-85  
 glad 323  
 go 73-83, 90-100  
 go away 86, 87  
 go to bed 154-6  
 greet 314, 315  
 grow 120-5, 313  
  
 hair cut 278  
 halt 126-9  
 hang 281, 282  
 happen 69, 292, 309  
 hasten 305, 306  
 have 291, 293  
 have time 305  
 have to 68-72  
 hear 217-23  
 heat 284, 285  
 help 60-2  
 hide 287  
 hire 168  
 hold 297  
 hope 320  
 hungry 65, 67, 197  
 hurry 305, 306  
 hurt 316  
  
 ill 316  
 impossible 59, 121, 122  
 improbable 59  
 included 152  
 incorrect 317  
 indispensable, 89  
 inquire 174, 317  
 intend 167  
 in time 305  
 intolerable 53, 108  
 introduce 113, 142, 176, 236  
 invite 268  
  
 jump 301  
  
 keep 129-32, 139-41, 297  
 keep to left, right 96, 297  
 kill 318  
 kiss 323  
 know 173-5  
 know how to 177-9  
  
 languages 170, 177-8, 186  
 late 81, 306  
 late (the) 319  
 laugh 321  
 lavatory 72, 167  
 lay 149-53  
 lead 112-14  
 learn 174, 311  
 leave (*intransitive*) 86, 87, 103, 104  
 leave (*transitive*) 139-41  
 left 297, 302  
 let (go) 256  
 lie 156, 157  
 lie down 154-6  
 lift 169  
 light 283-5  
 like (I) 323  
 like (I should) 67  
 like (to be) 53, 87  
 like this 56  
  
 listen 217-223  
 live 313-15  
 lock 280, 281  
 look 208-17  
 look for 287, 288  
 lose 286, 287  
 love 323, 324  
 lunch 198  
  
 make 251  
 marry 317, 318  
 may, mayn't 59  
 mean (intend, wish) 64-7  
 mean (signify) 175, 176  
 meet 300  
 mend 283  
 mention 309  
 miss 134, 257, 306  
 mistake 171, 186  
 move 297  
 must 68-72  
  
 name 264-6  
 necessary 68-72  
 need 68-72  
  
 obey 221  
 objection 294  
 obliged 68-72  
 obtain 133, 134  
 occupy 168  
 open 278-81  
 ought 68-72  
  
 pain 316  
 paint 234  
 part 136  
 pay 205, 206  
 permit 254, 255  
 permitted 59  
 pity 162  
 place 137, 138, 149-53  
 play 235  
 please 188, 323

- possible 59  
 Poste Restante 72  
 pour 13, 201  
 prefer 228  
 prepare 283  
 probable 59  
 procure 133, 134  
 promise 55, 56, 86  
 pronounce 108, 190  
 put 137, 138, 143,  
   144, 149-53  
 put out 284  
 put up 126-9  
  
 question 266-8  
  
 rain 76, 78, 79  
 read 224-8  
 receive 239, 240  
 receipt 235  
 recover 317  
 regret 58, 321  
 rejoice 323  
 remain 129-32  
 remember 309  
 remind 309  
 repeat 40  
 request 270  
 require 68-72  
 rest 276  
 return 303  
 ride 90-100  
 right 297, 302  
 ring 282  
 roast 198  
 run 240-8  
  
 sail 250  
 save 328  
 say 185-190  
 see 208-16  
 seek 287, 288  
 seem 191, 192  
 seize 298  
 sell 204  
 send 236-8
- serve 312  
 set 137, 138, 162  
 sew 201  
 shake 281  
 shave 277  
 shoot 30, 218  
 shove 143, 144  
 show 193  
 shut 278-81  
 sign 235  
 silent (be) 31  
 sing 235  
 sink 250  
 sit 160-2  
 sit down 158, 159  
 sleep 275  
 smell 223, 224  
 smile 321  
 smoke 28, 31, 65,  
   254, 258  
 snow 76, 79  
 sorry 58, 321  
 speak 185-90  
 spend 114, 287  
 spoil 217, 226, 283,  
   295  
 stand 115-17  
 start 73, 90, 297  
 stay 129-32, 315, 316  
 stop 126-9, 135  
 straight 96, 297  
 succeed 184  
 success 305  
 suffice 134, 298  
 sup 198  
 suppose 152, 153  
 sure 61  
 surprise 322  
 swim 250  
  
 take 163-9  
 take care 30  
 take photographs 169  
 talk 185-90  
 teach 184, 311
- tear 296  
 tell 185-90  
 thank 53  
 think 17, 22, 191, 192  
 thirsty 65, 67, 201  
 throw 295  
 tie 298  
 tired 136  
 toilet 72, 167  
 touch 297  
 travel 90-100  
 true (it is) = truth  
 truth 49  
 try 307  
 turn 301, 302  
  
 unbearable 108  
 understand, 170, 171  
 undress 144-8  
 unlock 280, 281  
 unnecessary 68-72  
 unpleasant 60  
 use, used 310  
 useful, useless 311  
  
 visit 75-9, 92-4, 292  
  
 wait 115-17, 127, 304  
 wake 275, 276  
 walk 74-83, 99  
 want 62-7  
 warm 284, 285  
 wash 276  
 waste 287  
 W.C. 72, 83, 167  
 wear 104-6  
 weep 321  
 weigh 282  
 wish 62-7  
 work 253  
 worthless 311  
 worth while 117, 118  
 wound 318  
 write, 231-4  
 wrong = incorrect



able - powerful - магия -  
accept - <sup>die</sup> dress up - переодевание.  
ache - fever - boil  
acquainted - dine'em - snack'em  
afraid - fearless - бой  
arrange - straighten - strive -  
astorish - language! - You Devil.  
bathe - water - jug - cup  
born - boy - spoil - rod  
make bed - poster -  
beg - drink health - prosit!  
begin chin.

магия  
принима́ть, принимаю  
бо́леть, - ять, - го́ль  
по-знако́миться  
бо́яться.  
устро́ивать  
удивля́ть.  
купа́ться-ся.  
ро́диться  
постла́ть  
проси́ть  
начина́ть.

**University of California  
SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY  
305 De Neve Drive - Parking Lot 17 • Box 951388  
LOS ANGELES, CALIFORNIA 90095-1388**

**Return this material to the library from which it was borrowed.**

---

94316

UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY



**A** 000 695 677 5

Univ  
S